

Understanding

The

Apocalypse

By

Father Aquinas

“And I heard a voice from Heaven saying to me: Seal up the things which the seven thunders have spoken.” Apoc 10:4

Copyright 2019 Father Aquinas

Thank you for downloading this eBook. You are welcome to share it with your friends.

This book may be reproduced, copied and distributed for non commercial purposes, provided the book remains in its complete original form.

If you enjoyed this book, please discover other works by this author.

Thank you for your prayerful support.

Dedication

To all our ancestors who have struggled to bring us the truth.

Without your courage and steadfastness,

we would have nothing.

We thank you.

Amen.

Table of Contents

[Prologue](#)

[Chapter 1 The Sacrament of the mystery of Christ](#)

[Chapter 2 Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamus, and Thyatira](#)

[Chapter 3 Sardis, Philadelphia, and Laodicea](#)

[Chapter 4 Vision of a throne set in heaven](#)

[Chapter 5 The book with the seven seals is opened](#)

[Chapter 6 The first six seals are opened](#)

[Chapter 7 The 144,000 are sealed in their foreheads](#)

[Chapter 8 The seventh seal opened. The seven trumpets](#)

[Chapter 9 The bottomless pit. The army of 200 million](#)

[Chapter 10 The mighty angel. The seven thunders](#)

[Chapter 11 The Temple. Two witnesses. Seventh Trumpet](#)

[Chapter 12 The Woman clothed with the sun. The Red Dragon](#)

[Chapter 13 The Antichrist and the False Prophet](#)

[Chapter 14 The Lamb and the 144,000](#)

[Chapter 15 The sea of glass. The seven vials](#)

[Chapter 16 The seven vials are poured out](#)

[Chapter 17 The great harlot. Scarlet beast. Seven kings](#)

[Chapter 18 Fall of Babylon, kings and merchants](#)

[Chapter 19 Marriage Feast of the Lamb](#)

[Chapter 20 The 1,000 years. The Last Judgement](#)

[Chapter 21 The New Jerusalem described](#)

[Chapter 22 The Tree of Life. The Conclusion](#)

[Appendix 1 - Petrus Romanus](#)

[Appendix 2 - Eucharistic Church](#)

[Abbreviations of the books of the Bible](#)

[Spiritual Numbers](#)

[Bibliography](#)

[Publications by the same author](#)

Prologue

The Apocalypse is all about the revelation of Jesus Christ. It deals with victory of those with the faith in Christ Jesus and the defeat of Satan, the Antichrist and the False Prophet and their demonic followers.

Since the Devil does not know the day or the hour, he must always have his antichrists and false prophets in place and their followers sinful.

Since believers in Jesus the Christ, the Messiah, do not know the day or the hour, they must always have the state of their soul immaculate. This immaculate man is Eucharist.

It is the common opinion that Saint John wrote The Apocalypse in or about the year 97-100 AD. Let the debate continue between the historians, as I do not want to get bogged down in these dates because to the worthy seeker, Saint John wrote this extraordinary document sometime in the year 2024 or thereafter. Why do I say so?

First: I wrote this article in the year 2012, and revised it in 2019. If the Great Tribulation were to start in the year 2021, it would not end until 2023 or later, because the Great Tribulation will last for not just the 1260 days, but for 1335 days if we include the words of the Prophet Daniel (*Dn 12:11,12*). I do not know when the Great Tribulation will start, and neither does anyone else in the world. However, I would not want to go into Iraq, or China, or Darfur or any other region of Sudan and tell the people to just wait for the Tribulation to start!

Second: Saint John was given the vision when he ‘was in the spirit’ on the Dominical Day, that is the Day of the Lord.

Saint John, being in the spirit, on the Lord’s Day, that is, when all that is written herein is completed he was looking back on history, not forward in time, when he wrote the book! Why do I say this? He says that ‘the time is at hand.’ “Blessed is he that reads and hears the words of this prophecy, and keeps those things which are written in it. For the time is at hand” (*Apoc 1:3*). From his perspective of the vision, he saw

this revelation in the ‘now,’ in the time at hand, he saw the New Jerusalem coming down out of Heaven from God, and he saw all things made new, on the Lord’s Day (*Apoc 21:2,5,6*). The New Jerusalem comes down after the Tribulation is completed, after the Devil, the Antichrist, and the False Prophet are shut up in the Hell of ‘fire and brimstone’ for all eternity.

It must be understood that when the events of this prophecy unfold, there are two distinct happenings:

1. When people receive, believe, act, and live the Word of God in all faith and in all it’s fulness, then that person advances higher and higher toward that eternal reward, the Paradise of God (*Ez 28:13*).
2. When people reject the Word of God in any part, they descend further and further in tribulation, and unless they convert and repent, they descend all the way into Hell where they shall remain in eternal darkness.

Let us clarify here the meanings of the names:

ISRAEL is the spiritual meaning of all God’s people who have called on the Name of the Lord, not that political entity in the Middle East.

JERUSALEM which means justice and peace, are all of those who live in an orderly and lawful arrangement in the place called the Church, and since ‘all things are made new’ I will henceforth call the New Jerusalem the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, and sometimes the Eucharistic Church. I say this because as Judaism was fulfilled in Christianity, so too Christianity is fulfilled in Eucharistedness, that is, man becoming one in Christ Jesus in Holy Eucharist, as is written: “In that day you shall know that I am in My Father: and you in Me, and I in you” (*Jn 14:20*).

ZION (or Sion) is the place of the law, that is the Church, the Eucharistic Church.

Son-ship in Christ comes to those who in the state of sinlessness and receive Him in Holy Communion, that is in Holy Eucharist, which can only be received in the Eucharistic Church. Man has had his day and made his choice. Some choose to follow Jesus and live in Him, in the Lord’s Day, in eternal happiness. The majority have chosen to follow Satan in eternal doom.

Every word of the Apocalypse has a mystical meaning. Every vision and every figure has a mystical understanding. The entire book can be summed up in its first 5 words: “*The Revelation of Jesus Christ.*” Unless you believe in the Real Presence of Christ Jesus in Holy Eucharist, through the miracle of transubstantiation, you will not be able to understand who or what is ‘*The Revelation of Jesus Christ.*’

Jesus said: “Behold I am with you all days, even to the consummation of the world” (*Mt 28:20*), and He is, in Holy Eucharist. “Then if any man shall say to you, ‘Lo here is Christ,’ or ‘There,’ do not believe him. If therefore they shall say to you, ‘Behold He is in the desert,’ go ye not out. ‘Behold He is in the closets,’ believe it not” (*Mt 24:23,26*). Why not? Where is He? He is within you who believe in His Real Presence and have received Him worthily in Holy Eucharist, having first received absolution for your sins in the Holy Sacrament of Confessions!

Therefore, His Second Coming is in those who receive Him in Holy Communion. Saint Paul writes: “Christ was offered once to exhaust the sins of many. The second time He shall appear without sin **in them that expect Him unto salvation**” (*Hb 9:28*). Saint Jerome wrote this as follows in the (Latin) Vulgate - the first ever Bible: “...Secundo sine peccato apparebit **expectantibus Se in salutem.**”

We said above that Jesus ‘is within you who believe in His Real Presence in Holy Eucharist.’ This Real Presence within you is called ‘Eucharistedness,’ and this person is the ‘New Man’ (*Ep 4:24*), and the ‘New Creature’ (*Ga 6:15*), that is Eucharistic man.

In order to more fully understand Eucharistedness and Eucharistic man, let us, turn to the moment after Jesus was laid in the Tomb, when the stone rolled over and sealed up the opening. Immediately after the Tomb was closed, the Divine power of Christ, the Second Person of the Holy Trinity, the ‘Christ’, His Spirit, which He yielded up to the Father on the Cross (*Lk 23:46*), stood over the human body of Jesus and beckoned Him to arise. The stirring of the lifeless Body was earth shattering. The Divinity entered into the Body and at that moment Glory radiated the Tomb. Slowly and with grace, as only a grace that God is capable of, the shroud fell from off His Body as He sat up. He gracefully took the wrapping from off His head, folded it, and sat it

where His Sacred Head had rested in repose. The dimension of the congested cave was lost, and there in Unity was the Holy Trinity, One, and that One was the Son.

This is the moment when Eucharist is born (*Lk 22:19,20*).

This is the moment when God births His New Creature (*Hb 12:23*).

This is the moment when God births His New Man, the new Adam (*1Co 15:45*).

This is the moment when Jesus is the First Born from the dead (*Rm 8:29*).

This is the moment when the inheritance is given to the First-born Son (*Hb 9:15-17*).

This is the moment when Jesus is given the primacy in all things (*Col 1:18*).

This is the moment when all power and authority is given to Jesus (*Mt 28:18*).

This is the moment of the birth of the Eucharistic Reign of Christ (*Hb 9:24*).

This is the moment of the Triumph of the Sacred Heart of Jesus and the Immaculate Heart of Mary (*Jn 19:26*).

This is the moment when God does His New thing (*Is 43:19*).

This is the moment when all things are made new (*Apoc 21:5*).

This is the moment when Eucharistic man is born (*Jn 1:12,13,16*).

This is the moment when all in Christ become the likeness of His resurrection, and walk in newness of life (*Rm 6:4,5*).

This is the moment when all who believe in Christ are made new (*2Co 5:17*).

This is the moment when all who are in Christ are a new creature (*2Co 5:17*).

This is the moment when all in Christ are born again in the Spirit (*Jn 3:5*).

This is the moment when we receive all the fulness of God (*Ep 3:19*).

This is the moment when all who are in faith receive Eternal Life (*Jn 6:48,50-52,54-57*).

This is the moment when the Devil is defeated forever (*Rm 6:9*).

This is the greatest moment in the history of creation.

It was at this moment that Jesus Christ became Christ Jesus, that is,

when His Divinity had pre-eminence over His humanity, a subject we will deal with later in chapter 8.

It is in our becoming one in Christ, and He becoming one in us, that we are translated into the new man. There is only one way that this can be accomplished, and one way only, we must believe, live, and fulfill the Seven Sacraments of the Church, no exceptions and no short-cuts. A Sacrament is the fulfilment of a Divine Promise. Every Sacrament has a purpose, and every Sacrament has a meaning. The Sacraments are the seven pillars of wisdom (*Pr 9:1*), which are the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven (*Mt 16:19*).

In **the Seven Sacraments**, the Seven Spirits of God are active in a particular way, each communicating the desired graces for the fulfilment of the Divine Promises in the soul. The Seven Sprits are: the spirit of wisdom, and of understanding, the spirit of counsel, and of fortitude, the spirit of knowledge, and of piety, and the spirit of the fear of the Lord (*Is 11:2,3*).

The first two Sacraments, **Baptism** and **Confessions**, are given to us for our personal preparation in pleasing God.

The second two Sacraments, **Holy Communion** and **Confirmation**, are for our gaining co-union and unity in God.

The third two Sacraments, **Matrimony** and **Holy Order**, are for our perfection and station in life.

The last Sacrament, **Extreme Unction**, is the final anointing of our eternal unity forever in The Eternal Word, which is entrance into Heaven.

The Seven Sacraments allow man of his free will to return to God.

1. At the Fall, in the act of disobedience, man fell from grace (*Gn 3:24*). The creature, made to the image of God was destroyed, but in the **Sacrament of Baptism** the way was made for man to be washed and renewed in God's peace (*Gn 8:11*).

2. Man would continue to sin, and so God instituted the **Sacrament of Confessions**, for man to be made immaculate again (*Jn 20:22,23*).

3. God set up the **Sacrament of Holy Communion**, so that man could

come back to unity in Him, and God could re-enter His creature - man, thus allowing man to return into holy co-union in God (*Mt 26:26-28*), which unity Adam gave away to Satan at the Fall.

4. God recognized in man that the spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak, and so, He established the **Sacrament of Confirmation** to assist man (*Lk 24:49*), to receive the Spirit of God, that is, the Holy Ghost, back into his life.

5. At the Fall, the unity of man and woman in marriage was broken, and the evil one became an intruder in marriage. God established the **Sacrament of Matrimony** (*Mk 10:9*), whereby man and woman could return to holy unity in each other, symbolic of the unity of God and man (*Mk 10:9*).

6. At the Fall, man broke the priestly relationship with God, and man could no longer minister in God's creation, because of his enslavement to the Devil. God established a way for man to minister to Him in purity and truth, through the **Sacrament of Holy Order of the Priesthood** (*Lk 22:19*).

7. At the Fall, man incurred the sin of death when he disobeyed God, and became subject to the eternal death of Satan. God established the **Sacrament of Extreme Unction**, allowing man to avoid eternal death, and come to the lasting and highest anointing, which we receive in Jesus - that is - Eternal Life (*Lk 7:11-15*).

The Revelation of Jesus Christ is about Eucharistic man coming into the glory of being full of Grace, while evil man, those who deny any part of the Seven Sacraments, descend into total 'dis-grace.' For those people who deny the Real Presence of Jesus in Holy Eucharist, their understanding will be extremely dim at best, and their interpretation will most probably be fatal to themselves and to all those poor unfortunates who follow their erroneous teachings. Jesus said: "There shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders, insomuch as to deceive (if possible) even the elect. Behold I have told it to you, beforehand" (*Mt 24:24,25*).

I admonish all who dare to interpret this great prophecy, to believe, practice, and live the Seven Sacraments which Jesus gave to His Church, and I emphasize HIS CHURCH, not the neo-church of modern

sinful man. We must live in HIS CHURCH, where He is with us all days, and the gates of Hell shall not prevail against it (*Mt 16:18*). He built His Church on the solid rock of the solid faith of Peter, yet this 'faith' cannot be separated from the man Peter, but upon the great faith of the man Peter who confessed that faith: 'Thou art Christ the Son of the Living God.' Christ did not build His Church on a man of weak faith, 'for He knew what was in man' (*Jn 2:25*).

This book is not difficult to understand if you are willing to open your mind, your soul, your ears, and your heart. We will learn more about this later in the seven letters to the seven churches.

The reading and study of this prophecy of the Revelation of Jesus Christ comes with seven very great Blessings which are:-

1. Blessed is he that reads and hears (*Apoc 1:3*).
2. Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord (*Apoc 14:13*).
3. Blessed is he that watches (*Apoc 16:15*).
4. Blessed are they that are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb (*Apoc 19:9*).
5. Blessed and holy is he that has part in the first resurrection (*Apoc 20:6*).
6. Blessed is he that keeps the words of the prophecy of this book (*Apoc 22:7*).
7. Blessed are they that wash their robes in the Blood of the Lamb (*Apoc 22:14*).

Note here that the meaning of the number 7 may be more than numerical, it may be spiritual, mystical, perfection, and/or prophetic.

There are two books from which I have taken copious notes and information which I strongly recommend to all worthy seekers of the events unfolding in these the 'last days.'

The first is by **Father Denis Fahey, C.S.Sp.**, (1883 - 1954), in his book entitled: *The Kingship of Christ and the Conversion of the Jewish Nation*. In my opinion he was one of the greatest prophets of the twentieth century.

The second is by **Father Herman Bernard Kramer**, (1884 -1976), in his book entitled: *The Book of Destiny*. The spiritual insight given to

him by Our Lord is phenomenal. I have in essence updated his work to the present day events, and use this Prologue to give credit to his outstanding Divinely inspired work.

These books are a must read for the serious inquirers into the words of 'The Revelation of Jesus Christ' and to them both I am prayerfully thankful.

Chapter 1

The Sacrament of the mystery of Christ

“The Apocalypse of Jesus Christ which God gave unto him, to make known to his servants the things which must shortly come to pass, and signified, sending by His angel to His servant John” (1:1).

The common interpretation of this verse is that God the Father, gave to His Son Jesus Christ the Revelation. This is not as I see it! Jesus Christ said: “I and the Father are One” (*Jn 10:30*). Again He said: “He that sees Me sees the Father also” (*Jn 14:9*). He also said to the Father: “...that they may be one, as We also are” (*Jn 17:11*). Why would God give to God the Revelation? Obviously there is something more in the mystical statement! Therefore the Revelation of Jesus Christ was not given to Jesus Christ by God the Father, but to those who had attained to “His image and likeness” (*Gn 1:26*), and this image and likeness can only be achieved by those who believe and live the Seven Sacraments, and especially through Holy Eucharist. The Sacrament of Holy Eucharist eventually brings the recipient into Eucharistic unity in God. I have addressed this subject briefly in the preceding Prologue.

I conclude then that the Revelation was given to Eucharistic man, and a very specific man identified as ‘...signified, sending by His angel...’ Since ‘all things are made new’, I say that this angel is not who we once called ‘the Vicar of Jesus Christ on earth’, but His monarch whom I will identify as Petrus Romanus (*See Appendix 1*). This Petrus Romanus is foretold in the ‘Prophecies of Saint Malachy’ which I will elaborate on later. It is necessary to state that Petrus Romanus is in Eucharistic unity in God, Holy Trinity, in other words he is the *king of powers* who is ‘*of the Beloved, of The Beloved*’, that is Petrus Romanus is of Christ Jesus Who is of The Beloved Father as is written: “The king of powers is of the Beloved, of The Beloved, and the beauty of the house shall divide spoils” (*Ps 67:13*). Petrus Romanus is given by God the total spiritual and temporal authority over the entire world. In order to clarify his dual function I will identify his temporal authority by referring to him as the Great Monarch as distinct from his spiritual authority Petrus Romanus. The Great Monarch is referred to by many Catholic prophets

over the last two thousand years. There has been much difference in what a great number of them say. I say that the Great Monarch is simply the Monarch who is referred to in Apocalypse 4:2. He is the one who approaches the throne recently set in heaven in the vision of Saint John. I further say that the Monarch and Petrus Romanus is the same person. This I will develop later.

This entire book is completed in the perfection and in the order of God. We will see more later that the angels mentioned in the Apocalypse are Eucharistic man and some with special assignments as bishops. This new creature 'Eucharistic man' is the fulfilment of Jesus saying that He would make all things new. Some people will accept this, some won't. Amen. So be it!

'*The things*' which Saint John would see and write were foretold to him by Jesus when He said to His Apostles: "Amen I say to you, there are some of them that stand here, that shall not taste death, till they see the Son of man coming in His Kingdom" (*Mt 16:28*). Saint Luke reports: "...till they see the Kingdom of God" (*Lk 9:27*). The book of the Apocalypse, the Revelation, fulfills the promise to Saint John who saw 'the Son of man coming in His Kingdom.'

Saint John wrote down the events in the heavens, on the earth, and the things which he saw coming up out of the depths of the earth,

- a) the abyss,
- b) the bottomless pit (which are separate from Hell), and
- c) the things which he saw being cast down to Hell that is the hell of 'fire and brimstone' for all eternity, and
- d) the things he saw coming down from Heaven.

God sent His appointed (*angel*) Petrus Romanus, who in turn gave to Saint John, "*who has given testimony to the word of God, and the testimony of Jesus Christ, what things soever he has seen*" (*1:2*). The Apostle who has given testimony in his Gospel and his three Epistles would then write '*the things*' which will shortly happen, and pass it on to the Church.

In the unfolding of the New Creature in the following pages, the worthy seeker will see Eucharistic man, Christ Jesus. Remember that the old man, Jesus, died on the Cross, and the New Man, Christ Jesus, arose from the dead as we dealt with in the Prologue. It is in Holy Eucharist that we are admonished to “put on the new man, who according to God is created in justice and holiness of truth” (*Ep 4:24*). Saint Paul emphasizes and elaborates on this when he says: “Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin may be destroyed, to the end that we may serve sin no longer. For he that is dead is justified from sin. Now, if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall live also together with Christ” (*Rm 6:6-8*). I wish to point out an interesting fact in the Holy Scripture of the New (*Second*) Testament: Jesus Christ is named 177 times, while Christ Jesus, the New Man, is mentioned 92 times. (Six times the two Names are mentioned in the same verse: 1Co 1:2; Ga 2:16; Ep 1:1; Phil 1:1; 1T 1:1; 2T 1:1). Think about it!

“Blessed is he that reads and hears the words of this prophecy, and keeps those things which are written in it, for the time is at hand” (1:3). The first of the seven blessings of the Apocalypse is given. We are encouraged to read this book, and hear in our hearts what God is saying to us. *‘The time is at hand’* indicates that when the events revealed herein begin to be fulfilled, then all will be fulfilled quickly and we must be prepared to meet our God (*Am 4:12*).

“John, to the seven churches which are in Asia. Grace be unto you and peace, from him that is, and that was, and that is to come, and from the seven spirits which are before his throne” (1:4).

The seven churches in the ‘*Asia*’ mentioned here is that area of modern day Turkey, and the Greek Islands, of which Patmos was one, which was close at hand to the Asia (Turkish) mainland. This also means that it is written to all who are close at hand, that is, it is written to us for we are close at hand to the prophetic completion of all things.

The seven churches signifies various stages of spiritual life which we shall see.

‘Grace’ in it’s simplest meaning is the gift of the Holy Ghost, the Spirit of God, given ‘unto you.’

When it is written: ‘*from him that is, and that was, and that is to come,*’ it must be pointed out the use of the pronoun ‘that’ is used to identify a specific person, or singling out someone with a particular feature, while ‘*who*’ is a pronoun indicating a particular person. In this verse which differs from the ‘Who is...Who was...’ in verse 8, the ‘*that*’ of this verse 4 would indicate a particular identity which is not Jesus Christ, but Eucharistic man. ‘*That*’ in common language refers to a lesser, while ‘*who*’ refers to the particular person.

In this verse 4 Saint John is stating a different person than Jesus speaking, as we will see in verse 5.

1. He *that is*, living in the Heart of the Father from all eternity (*Ps 109:3*).
2. He *that was*, immaculate in the Paradise of Pleasure (*Gn 2:8*).
3. He *that is to come*, in Eucharistic man (*Jn 17:21*), in Holy Communion, endowed with the *seven spirits* of God, living in the Seven Sacraments of the Church (*Throne of God*).

‘...*from the seven spirits which are before His Throne...*’ What or who are ‘*the spirits*’? Are they the ‘*seven spirits*’ the seven-fold gifts of the Holy Ghost? Are they the Seven Sacraments of the Church? Are they the seven angels of the seven churches? What is their importance? We will see these answers as we progress throughout the entire book. I only ask that you throw out all previous ideas and look at everything through a fresh mind, heart, ears, and eyes. Saint Paul says: “Put off, according to former conversation, the old man, who is corrupted according to the desire of error, and be renewed in spirit of your mind: and put on the new man, who according to God is created in justice and holiness of truth” (*Ep 4:22-24*). In other words, acquire a fresh spiritual way of thinking.

“*and from Jesus Christ, Who is the Faithful Witness, the First begotten of the dead, and the Prince of the kings of the earth, Who has loved us, and washed us from our sins in His Own Blood, and has made us a*

Kingdom, and priests to God and his Father. To Him be glory and empire for ever and ever. Amen” (1:5,6).

Now Jesus is identified and He is different from the ‘that’ which we just saw. Jesus is ‘*the Faithful Witness,*’ Who came to redeem fallen man. He is the Son of God, Who came to do the Will of God the Father (*Jn 6:40*).

Jesus is the ‘*First begotten of the dead, and the Prince of the kings of the earth*’ (*Col 1:18*), as He holds the primacy in all things, and all the angels of God adore Him (*Hb 1:6*).

‘*He has made us a Kingdom,*’ reconfirms what Jesus said to His Apostles: “I dispose to you, as My Father has disposed to Me, a Kingdom (*Lk 22:29*).

“Behold, He comes with the clouds, and every eye shall see Him, and they also that pierced Him. And all the tribes of the earth shall bewail themselves because of Him. Even so. Amen. I am Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End, saith the Lord God, Who is, and Who was, and Who is to come, the Almighty” (1:7,8).

‘*Clouds*’ indicate a warning about an impending storm or disaster, and so when we see the warning signs of the great tribulation, all people are alerted to prepare, but it is best to not wait till then!

‘*They also that pierced Him*’ include not only the Jews who handed Him over to be crucified, but to those soldiers at the Crucifixion, and also all those who desecrate Him in Holy Communion, and all who deny His Real Presence in Holy Eucharist. The audacity of man to tell God what God can do or not do! How dare they tell God that He cannot come in a piece of bread or a drop of wine! How dare they deny God’s presence in the ‘burning bush’ of today, which is Holy Eucharist!

The two ‘*Amens,*’ here and in verse 6, certify that what is said is true, is Truth, is a fact. The second ‘*Amen*’ ends the words of Jesus speaking directly to Saint John, and now then begins ‘*the revelation*’ and the things which will happen.

There may seem to be a duplication of verses 4 & 8, but in fact verse 4 states ‘from him that is, that was, that is to come...’ while verse 8 states:

‘Who is, and Who was, and Who is to come.’ When Jesus says ‘Who is, and Who was, and Who is to come,’ St. John is saying that:

1. (*He Who is*) - He it is Who is Eternal,
2. (*He Who was*) - He it is Who as Man came to earth to redeem us,
3. (*Who is to come*) He is the Just Judge Who will come to judge the world, He is (*the Almighty*)!

*“I, John, your brother and your partner in tribulation, and in the Kingdom, and patience in Christ Jesus, was in the island which is called Patmos, for the word of God and for the testimony of Jesus. I was in the spirit on **the Lord’s day** and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet, saying: ‘What you see, write in a book and send to the seven churches which are in Asia: to Ephesus, and to Smyrna, and to Pergamus, and to Thyatira, and to Sardis, and to Philadelphia, and to Laodicea’” (1:9-11).*

When it is said: ‘I was in the spirit on the Lord’s day...’ St. Jerome wrote in the Vulgate: ‘in dominica die,’ and although this is properly translated from the Latin as ‘in the Lord’s day,’ signifying the seventh day of the new week, or Sunday, I would prefer to treat it as ‘the day of the Lord.’ Why? Because what follows in the prophecy is a combination of corrections to the faithful, admonishments to the erring, and destruction for those who are obstinate and defiant against God. The Prophet Zephaniah treats of this day with a harsh warning: “Be silent before the face of the Lord God, for **the day of the Lord** is near, for the Lord has prepared a victim, He has sanctified His guests. And it shall come to pass in **the day** of the victim of the Lord, that I will visit upon the princes, and upon the king’s sons, and upon all such as are clothed with strange apparel, and I will visit **in that day** upon every one that enters arrogantly over the threshold, them that fill the house of the Lord their God with iniquity and deceit. And there shall be **in that day**, saith the Lord, the noise of a cry from the fish gate, and a howling from the Second, and a great destruction from the hills” (*Zp 1:7-10*). In other words, ‘the clouds’ of verse 7 are going to pour out their storm, in the great and terrible day of the Lord.

When Zephaniah says ‘He has sanctified His guests,’ Jesus means that the few who will believe in Him and in the manner of His coming, He

has sanctified them and made them ready for the events related in the Apocalypse. The sanctified guests are Eucharistic man. The mention of 'strange apparel' means that: "A woman shall not be clothed with man's apparel, neither shall a man use woman's apparel, for he that does these things is abominable before God" (*Dt 22:5*). It also means that those who take upon themselves to preach and *act in the Name of God*, and to have entered 'arrogantly over the threshold,' when God has not called them to do that which they are doing, and so God will punish them severely.

Saint John heard behind him '*a great voice, as of a trumpet,*' and this was a warning to all the inhabitants of the earth: "Blow ye the trumpet in Zion, sound an alarm in My holy mountain, let all the inhabitants of the land tremble, because **the day of the Lord** comes, because it is near at hand" (*Jl 2:1*). God has His angels blow the trumpets, and what we see here is 'an angel' and this angel is Eucharistic man, of whom we will elaborate in much greater detail in the next verses. The 'great voice' of authority, commanded him to write to all the churches.

Here now is the first vision in the Book of Revelation.

*"And I turned to see the voice that spoke with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks, and in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks, **one like to the Son of man**, clothed with a garment down to the feet, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle. And his head and his hairs were white as white wool and as snow. And his eyes were as a flame of fire, and his feet like unto fine brass, as in a burning furnace. And his voice as the sound of many waters"* (*1:12-15*).

'*One like to the Son of man*' is referred to in almost all the commentaries as Jesus, but I am not of that opinion. Why? Because Saint John said in another place: "And I fell down before his feet, to adore him. And he said to me: 'See you do it not. **I am your fellow servant** and of your brethren who have the testimony of Jesus. Adore God'" (*Apoc 19:10*). And again the beloved Disciple said: "And I, John, who have heard and seen these things, and, after I had heard and seen, I fell down to adore before the feet of the angel who showed me the things. And he said to me: 'See you do it not. **For I am your fellow servant, and of your brethren the prophets** and of them that keep the

words of the prophecy of this book. Adore God”” (*Apoc 22:8,9*). This ‘one like to the Son of man’ is Eucharistic man. We will explain.

It is written that God said: “Let Us make man to Our image and likeness...And God created man to His Own image, to the image of God He created him: male and female He created them” (*Gn 1:26,27*). The ‘likeness’ which is not mentioned here was to come through Jesus Christ.

At the moment of His resurrection from the dead, Jesus became the New Man, the Firstborn from the dead, the New Creature, that is He became Eucharistic Man. Therefore what Saint John saw was the first vision of the ‘sons of God,’ that is the sons of Jesus Eucharist, for Jesus is prophesied as the ‘Father of the world **TO** come’ (*Is 9:6*), which in Holy Eucharist He has come, therefore Jesus is the Father of the world which **IS** come!

This ‘one like to the Son of man’ is Eucharistic man, and he is not the Christ, the Second Person of the Blessed Trinity, but is the first born of Christ Jesus, the new creature in Christ Jesus, the new creation in Christ Jesus Holy Eucharist. Eucharistic man is the fulfilment of Holy Eucharist in those who have the faith of God (*Mk 11:22*).

Saint John is seeing the fulfilment of what Saint Paul wrote about when he said: “...may we in all things grow up in Him, Who is the Head (*Ep 4:15*), walking in newness of life, in the likeness of His resurrection (*Rm 6:4,5*), to perfect man, unto the measure of the age of the fulness of Christ” (*Ep 4:13*). What is spoken of here is the new creature, the new man, Eucharistic man. Let us deal with this Eucharistic man in the embryonic stage in the womb of the woman: “And being with child, she cried also travailing, and was in pain to be delivered...And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with an iron rod. And her son was taken up to God and to His Throne” (*Apoc 12:2,4,5*). As the child, Eucharistic man, emerges, walks in newness of Life, that is in Jesus Eucharist, and gradually becomes the image and likeness of the Resurrection of Christ Jesus, becoming the absolute perfect man, growing into the fulness of the Mystical Body of Christ, which is the

completion of the plan of God to bring all of His creation back into the beauty of the Garden of Eden, back into the Tree of Life, from which Adam and Eve were banished.

This then is the ‘new man,’ the ‘new creature,’ born again new, and who is endowed with the Seven Spirits of God. In another place Jesus said: “I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. But when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will teach you all truth. ***For he shall not speak of himself***, but what things soever he shall hear, he shall speak. And the things that are to come, he shall show you. He shall glorify Me because he shall receive of Mine and shall show it to you. All things whatsoever the Father has are Mine. Therefore I said that he shall receive of Me and show it to you” (*Jn 16:12-15*). Some mistakenly say this ‘Spirit of truth’ is the Holy Ghost. Not so! Why? Because the Three Divine Persons, Holy Trinity, are one God, and one Lord, not in the oneness of a single person, but in the Trinity of one substance (*Hb 1:3*). Of the Holy Ghost it cannot be said that ‘he shall not speak of himself, but what things soever he shall hear, he shall speak.’ The Holy Ghost is the Third Divine Person of the Holy Trinity. The Trinity is the True and Everlasting Godhead, in Whom we adore, (*Col 2:9*) a distinction in Persons, a oneness in Being, an equality in Majesty. So it can be categorically stated that the ‘Spirit of truth’ referred to here is not the Holy Ghost, but the new man, in the image and LIKENESS of God. Saint John wrote: “But as many as received Him (*Jesus*), He (*Jesus*) gave them power to be made the sons of God, to them that believe in His Name, who are born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God” (*Jn 1:12,13*). In another place Jesus said: “Unless a man be born again of water and the Holy Ghost, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit” (*Jn 3:5,6*). So this ‘one like to the Son of man’ is the new man, Eucharistic man, who has entered into the fulness of God through the Second coming of Jesus in faithful man in Holy Eucharist, Holy Communion, Holy Co-union.

The Psalmist confirms this wonderful new creature: “Give ye glory to God for Israel, His magnificence, and His power is in the clouds. **God**

is wonderful **IN His saints**, the God of Israel is He Who will give power and strength to His people. Blessed be God” (*Ps 67:35,36*). This ‘power and strength’ comes only through Holy Eucharist.

It is recorded later on: “He that shall overcome shall possess these things, and I will be his God, and he shall be My son” (*Apoc 21:7*). This then is the ‘son’ of Christ Jesus. Of Jesus it was prophesied: “For a Child is born to us, and a Son is given to us, and the government is upon His shoulder, and His Name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, God the Mighty, the Father of the world to come, the Prince of Peace. His empire shall be multiplied, and there shall be no end of peace. He shall sit upon the Throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to establish it, and strengthen it, with judgment and with justice, from henceforth and for ever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this” (*Is 9:6,7*). Now if Jesus is the Father of the world - to come, then who will be His sons and daughters? The answer is simple, those: ‘who are born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God,’ as we saw earlier. These ‘sons of God’ are in the Spirit of God, and “therefore, as we have borne the image of the earthly, let us bear also the image of the heavenly” (*1Co 15:49*). How then can there be any question of who is speaking to Saint John but Eucharistic man, the new creation, and a very specific Eucharistic man, for he is the Christ’s monarch on earth, Petrus Romanus.

The ‘*one like to the son of man,*’ was ‘*clothed with a garment down to the feet,*’ signifying that he was of the priesthood of Jesus, Priest of God, ‘*girt about the paps with a golden girdle,*’ signifying the authority, and dignity, of the royalty of the Priest of God. ‘*His head and his hairs were white as white wool and as snow,*’ certify his authority (*head*), and his birth in the Heart of God the Father from all eternity {*white hair*} (*Ps 109:3*). ‘*His eyes were as a flame of fire,*’ because he has received the wisdom and knowledge of God. ‘*His feet like unto fine brass, as in a burning furnace,*’ because he is given the eternal permanence of God, and fulfills His plan of creation from all eternity and unto the eternity which never ends. ‘*His voice as the sound of many waters,*’ because of the fear inspired by his majesty, which is total authority over all the earth, to bring it into subjection to the Will of God the Father (*Mt 7:21*), which as I said above, is the majesty of God.

“And he had in his right hand seven stars. And from his mouth came out a sharp two-edged sword. And his face was as the sun shines in his power” (1:16).

‘He had in his right hand seven stars’ confirming that he has the power of Almighty God given to him (*right hand*), to bring all into perfection, either by conversion or destruction. He is the authority of God over all the princes of the churches, to direct, instruct, and assist in all matters.

Remember that Jesus said: “Behold, I have given you power to tread upon serpents and scorpions and upon all the power of the enemy, and nothing shall hurt you” (*Lk 10:19*), and again: “I send the promise of My Father upon you, but stay you in the city till you be endued with power from on high” (*Lk 24:49*), and again as stated previously: ‘But as many as received Him, He gave them power to be made the sons of God, to them that believe in His Name,’ and again: “But you shall receive the power of the Holy Ghost coming upon you, and you shall be witnesses unto Me in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and Samaria, and even to the uttermost part of the earth’ (*Ac 1:8*). This promise of the power is fulfilled in Eucharistic man, the new creature. The promise of this power and authority was given to the first Apostles, but since then the ‘church’ has divided Christ into a thousand contentious ‘christian’ factions, so it was asked: “Is Christ divided?” (*1Co 1:13*). It became necessary for Christ Jesus to do ‘a new thing.’

‘And from his mouth came out a sharp two-edged sword,’ because he is prepared to afflict and destroy if necessary faithless Christians, neo-Christians, and all other infidels, and anti-christs, and also to defend, protect, and succor, the true believers. *‘His face was as the sun shines in his power,’* because in God, he has the power and the authority to correct, teach, and make permanent, and bring in the new era of God in the New Garden of Eden. This power is derived because God dwells in Him through Holy Eucharist, with God the Father in Jesus, and in turn Jesus in His new creature, in Eucharistic union in Holy Communion. This unity and accomplishment is the Second Coming of Christ. Remember:

The First Coming of Christ was as man,

The Second Coming of Christ is in man,

The Third Coming of Christ is to judge man (*Mt 25:31-46*).

Now then when we read: “*When I had seen him, I fell at his feet as dead, and he laid his right hand upon me, saying: ‘Fear not. I am the first and the last, and alive, and was dead, and behold I am living for ever and ever, and have the keys of death and of Hell’*” (1:17,18).

We see that the mind, wisdom, power, authority, and unity of God is in man, and man is in His God, and we see that ‘Christ is all, and in all’ (Col 3:11). We see that the cycle is completed:

- 1st From perfect man in the Paradise of pleasure (*alive*),
- 2nd To fallen man expelled from the Garden of Eden (*dead*),
- 3rd To perfect man through Christ Jesus, Who brings us to completion in Himself, Perfect man, Eucharistic man, in the Paradise of God (*living for ever and ever*).

We see the full circle:

God made man perfect (*Adam*) and gave him the power of God living in the absolute bliss of Paradise.

The Devil seduced Adam, and so man fell from immaculate power to sinful man, under the dominion of evil.

God the Son became Man, and through His Sacrifice, gave fallen man the opportunity and grace to be restored to immaculacy.

Man would have to fight against the Devil in order to recover the immaculate state which he lost to Satan.

In believing the Sacrifice of the Son of God, fallen man could:

- 1). reject Satan,
- 2). live the promises of God,
- 3). abolish Satan out of his life,
- 4). become immaculate through the Seven Sacraments,
- 5). take back the earth and all it’s creatures from the evil one,
- 6). return all to Jesus,
- 7). which completes the restoration of man,
- 8). in the purified creation, return all to God.

The spiritual number 8 means a new beginning!

This new man is ‘alter Christus,’ is ‘other Christ’ as Saint Paul indicates most dramatically when he states: “You despised not, nor rejected, but received me as an angel of God, even as Christ Jesus” (Ga 4:14). Again he says: “But doing the truth in charity, we may in all things grow up in

Him who is the head, even Christ” (*Ep 4:15*). By ‘doing the truth’ he means that in spite of opposition and persecution we must persevere to become perfect in Christ Jesus, bringing with us those who will believe and enter by the narrow gate (*Lk 13:24*).

He has ‘*the keys of death and of Hell,*’ because he lives the Seven Sacraments of the Church (*keys*) and has the power to destroy evil (*death*).

“Write therefore the things which you have seen, and which are, and which must be done hereafter. The Sacrament of the seven stars, which you saw in my right hand and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches. And the seven candlesticks are the seven churches” (1:19,20).

(Saint Jerome wrote in the Vulgate: “*Sacramentum septem stellarum...*”, not ‘mystery’ which some have erroneously re-written, but it is the ‘Sacrament’ of the seven stars). As we said before, seven in spiritual numbers signifies spiritual perfection.

‘The things which you have seen, and which are, and which must be done hereafter’ confirms the work which Eucharistic man, the new creature must do. *The things which you have seen*, that is the visions; *and which are*, the situations as they are now; *and which must be done* the work of making all things new.

Everything Eucharistic man does is in union in Christ Jesus. Jesus is the Sacrament of Sacraments, and so all is done in Him. Eucharistic man always includes Jesus in all things, for Christ is All and in all (*Col 3:11*), (who invite Him). Jesus said: “In that day you shall know that I am in My Father, and you in Me, and I in you” (*Jn 14:20*). This unity is in Eucharistic man.

A Sacrament is the fulfilment of a Divine promise, and so ‘*The Sacrament of the seven stars*’ confirms the fulfilment of the promise made to Saint Peter and the Apostles that the ‘gates of Hell shall not prevail.’ The ‘*angels*’ are the bishops in the Church, and the Church is

heaven on earth where Jesus resides in His Eucharistic new creation. This 'heaven' is distinguished from 'Heaven' the Throne of Almighty God. At the time of this prophecy by Saint John, he sees the Holy Eucharistic (formerly called 'Catholic') Church in the love of God, in the hand of Eucharistic man.

Let us be clear about the word 'Catholic.' It is taken from the Greek word 'Katholikos' meaning 'universal.' The universality of the command from Jesus is recorded in Holy Writ: "All power is given to Me in Heaven and in earth. Going therefore, teach ye all nations: baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost" (*Mt 28:18,19*). "Go ye into the whole world and preach the Gospel to every creature" (*Mk 16:15*). "You shall receive the power of the Holy Ghost coming upon you, and you shall be witnesses unto Me in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and Samaria, and even to the uttermost part of the earth" (*Ac 1:8*). "... penance and remission of sins should be preached in His Name, unto all nations, beginning at Jerusalem" (*Lk 24:47*). Jesus ascended into Heaven in the year 33 AD. It is recorded that "at Antioch the disciples were first named Christians" (*Ac 11:26*), this was in 42 AD, some nine years after the Ascension.

The term 'Christian' has been abused by many defectors from the true faith in Christ Jesus, and we find the Copts, Orthodox, Protestant all calling themselves 'Christian' and even 'Catholic' while denying some or all of the Seven Sacraments. We hear of the Coptic Catholic, the Orthodox Catholic, and some of the multitudinous Protestant churches call themselves 'Catholic.' The term 'Catholic' is now taken to mean and to include all 'Christians.' The true 'Catholic' is 'Eucharistic,' and sets himself apart from the other transgressors of the term 'Catholic.' A true Christian accepted that the Pope was the Vicar of Christ, and the successor of the Primacy of Saint Peter. Anyone, even a pope, who denies or changes the Bible (as in Vatican II), is neither Catholic nor Christian, but is a pawn in the plan of evil. We will elaborate more on this as we progress through 'The Revelation.'

The revelation of Jesus Christ is the promise made in the Old Testament: "And I will make a covenant of peace with them, it shall be an everlasting

covenant with them, and I will establish them, and will multiply them, and will set My Sanctuary in the midst of them for ever. And My Tabernacle shall be with them, and I will be their God, and they shall be My people” (*Ez 37:26,27*), God in us, and we in God (*Jn 17*), in Eucharistic unity.

‘The revelation of Jesus Christ’ is the power, authority, and unity of God in man, and man in God, through the power of Holy Eucharist in His new creature, Eucharistic man, Christ Jesus (*Ps 149:6-9*). Armed with this knowledge, we can now proceed in understanding the rest of the Apocalypse.

Chapter 2

Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamus, and Thyatira

Sometimes we need a little help in remembering things, so here is a help in using abbreviations for the seven churches:

E. S. P. - Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamus.

T. S. P. & L: - Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia, & Laodicea.

There are seven individual churches, each separate, but each has a common thread if only they would listen. The seven churches could be described as the horrible proliferation of different 'Christian' churches which will exist, and do exist, in this, the latter day in the seven continents.

The messages, directions, warnings given to the seven churches are a wake up call to correct their ways before the final great evangelization begins as detailed in Chapters 11 and 19. *"He that has an ear let him hear ..."*

With the exception of the church of Ephesus the letters to the churches start with: *'To the angel of the church of...'* and this 'angel' is a bishop. These 'angels' throughout the Apocalypse are not necessarily the angels in Heaven whom we imagine with wings, flying about here and yonder. It is written: "The lips of the priests shall keep knowledge, and they shall seek the law at his mouth, because he is the angel of the Lord of hosts" (*Mal 2:7*), and again: "For even as an angel of God, so is my lord the king, that he is neither moved with blessing nor cursing..." (*2S 14:17*). It is also recorded that Jesus said: "But what went you out to see? A prophet? Yea I tell you, and more than a prophet. For this is he of whom it is written: 'Behold I send My angel before My face, who shall prepare thy way before Thee' (*Mt 11:9,10*). Saint Paul said: "...You received me even as an angel of God..." (*Ga 4:14*). And further he wrote: "And hospitality do not forget, for by this some, being not aware of it, have entertained angels" (*Hb 13:2*).

Having therefore scripturally established that angels may be humans, let

us proceed.

As with all of the seven churches, please note that they are addressed as “the church of...” not ‘the Church in...’ The reason for this is that the ‘churches’ are so individual, that they do not harmonize with God Almighty. Just as in the Protestant revolution, the Church IN England became separate and was named ‘The church OF England,’ although not really a ‘church,’ but one of and by man. Not one of the seven churches are truly devoted to the full service and dedication in Jesus Christ. Some might argue in favor of the church of Philadelphia, but as we shall see shortly, this church has its failings.

There is an identical admonition to all the churches: *“He that has an ear let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.”* This counsel is repeated to all the seven churches. Why? Because it is an individual message for each group (church) of people, and as such, all are asked to heed the warning, and in all cases to listen to the encouragement to leave the error of the establishment, and come to Jesus Eucharist, the New Man. Each one of us who proclaim Jesus Christ, are members of His Church in which He is the Head. However, if some deny any part of His Word, they may be ‘a church,’ but no longer members of ‘His Church.’

We must listen to what is being said to all the churches, as we have in ourselves some error that is being condemned. We have or perhaps had, present within us, some of the sins which are being exposed, and we must open our ear, our spiritual ear, to hear what the Spirit of God is saying within us. If we have ‘tuned out’ God, then we have not an ear to hear what the Spirit says. How very sad for those who do so. How very encouraging for those who do listen!

Let us now turn to the closer examination of what is the mystery of each of the churches.

The church of Ephesus.

“Unto the angel of the church of Ephesus write: These things says he who holds the seven stars in his right hand, who walks in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks, I know your works and your labour and your

patience and how you can not bear them that are evil. And you have tried them who say they are apostles and are not, and have found them liars, and you have patience and have endured for My Name and have not fainted” (2:1-3).

First of all notice that the message to Ephesus begins with ‘*Unto the angel...*’ while the other six churches begins with ‘*And to the angel...*’ There is something special given to this church which is different from the rest, and immediately we see this. The Ephesus church may be referred to as the Apostolic church because of their works, labor, and how they refute those so called ‘*apostles*’ who are in fact ‘*liars*.’ This church opposes false teachers (*Nicolaites*) who deny the Seven Sacraments, and especially the existence of Jesus in Holy Eucharist. This church is the ‘lead’ or ‘head’ church in the final evangelization and battle against Satan. It is not located in Jerusalem or Rome.

The angel of the church of Ephesus is the Bishop, or priest, whom the hierarchy, acting in the Name of Jesus, has placed in charge of it, that is, in charge of the pastoral duties to the flock, to help, assist, and keep, before God. The pastor is commended, and then is chastised by the Eucharistic Monarch, Petrus Romanus, who is head of the Church. Petrus Romanus holds the seven stars in his right hand which is the power to execute justice, that is, the fulfilment of what the shepherd should do, and should teach his flock. This teaching is centered around the Seven Sacraments, which in themselves fulfill all the law, and the prophets, and the promise of Eternal unity in Jesus ‘for ever,’ that is no beginning, and ‘for ever,’ that is no end. In spite of some failings, the church is commended for holding fast to the Name of Christ Jesus. Saint Paul said: “Some out of contention preach Christ not sincerely...But what then? So that by all means, whether by occasion or by truth, Christ be preached” (*Phil 1:17,18*).

‘and you have patience and have endured for My Name and have not fainted’ - meaning that the faithful have endured for ‘*My Name*’ which is the name ‘Eucharistic man,’ the Name of Christ Jesus, for the new creation is ‘Eucharistic man Christ Jesus.’

“But I have somewhat against you, because you have left your first

charity” (2:4).

This church itself is rebuked because it has *left it's first charity*. What is the *'first charity'*? The first love is Jesus, Holy Eucharist, Who is the Tree of Life, the Seven Sacraments. The church must trust in His merciful love to provide for the spiritual and temporal needs of the flock, while the pastor in all humility sustains the flock with the spiritual needs - the Seven Sacraments.

“Be mindful therefore from whence you are fallen, and do penance, and do the first works. Or else I come to you and will move your candlestick out of its place, except you do penance” (2:5).

The bishops and priests and religious have fallen into sin. By pursuing the earthly luxuries and temporal gain, the majority of shepherds have reduced the spirituality of the flock to an inconvenient act, and so they are warned: Do penance, return to the Truth, or else!

“But this you have, that you hate the deeds of the Nicolaites, which I also hate” (2:6).

Again through Petrus Romanus, the Monarch, they are commended because they *'hate the deeds of the Nicolaites, which I also hate,'* that is, all those who deny Transubstantiation, the Real Presence of Jesus under the species of Bread and Wine, and conduct careless reception of Holy Eucharist by the public.

“He that has an ear let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him that overcomes I will give to eat of the Tree of Life which is in the Paradise of my God.” (2:7).

This *Tree of Life* is Jesus Eucharist, Who is the Way, and the Truth, and the Life, and no man comes to the Father, but by Him (*Jn 14:6*).

Jesus gave His life for our salvation on the tree of the Cross, telling us that: “He that eats My Flesh and drinks My Blood has everlasting life, and I will raise him up in the last day...He that eats My Flesh and drinks My Blood abides in Me, and I in him” (*Jn 6:55,57*).

The *'Tree of Life'* is protected from the very beginning, and we see that the Lord God “placed before the Paradise of Pleasure, Cherubims, and a

flaming sword, turning every way, to keep the way of the Tree of Life” (*Gn 3:24*). In the Celestial order, the Cherubim are in the highest order, that is they are in God’s court, assigned to God the Son, Who is Jesus, and they are in protection of the Word of God.

The order of the Angelic Choir would look something like:

	FATHER	SON	HOLY GHOST
<i>Angels</i>	<i>Angels of Life</i>	<i>Angels of Word</i>	<i>Angel of Love</i>
<i>God's Court</i>	<i>Thrones</i> <small>Ps 44:7</small>	<i>Cherubim</i> <small>Gn 3:24</small>	<i>Seraphim</i> <small>Is 6:1-3</small>
<i>Cosmos</i>	<i>Princes</i> <small>Col 1:16</small>	<i>Powers</i> <small>1P 3:21; Mt 28:18</small>	<i>Dominations</i> <small>Ep 1:21, 3:10</small>
<i>Earth</i>	<i>Angels</i> <small>Mt 26:53</small>	<i>Archangels</i> <small>Jude 1:9 1P 2:13, Lk 1:19</small>	<i>Virtues</i> <small>Ep 1:21</small>

Jesus gave us His Word as to His Flesh and Blood. He gave us His Word that He is the Tree and we the branches, saying: “I am the Vine, you the branches. He that abides in Me, and I in him, the same bears much fruit, for without Me you can do nothing” (*Jn 15:5*).

When the Church teaches otherwise, or changes the ‘rules’ for receiving Jesus Eucharist, then they cease to be members of the Mystical Body of Christ, and Jesus will come and ‘*move the candlestick out of its place,*’ as He threatened at Ephesus.

The Seven Sacraments protect the way to the Tree of Life. It is only through the Seven Sacraments that one can receive Jesus in Holy Communion, and thus come into Eucharistic union in Him.

Let us examine who is speaking here: ‘*To him that overcomes I will give to eat of the Tree of Life which is in the Paradise of my God.*’ I have purposely stated ‘*my God*’ instead of ‘*My God.*’ Why do I do this? Because it is Eucharistic man who is speaking to Saint John. Eucharistic man is in unity in Jesus, and it is to Eucharistic man that Jesus gives His great authority and power to do what He promised: “Amen, amen, I say to you, he that believes in Me, the works that I do, he also shall do, and greater than these shall he do” (*Jn 14:12*). These ‘greater things’ include

re-opening the Gates to the Paradise of Pleasure, and casting Satan and all his ugly cohorts into Hell for all eternity.

So, when the church like Ephesus leaves the way of the Seven Sacraments, *'the first love,'* then the church (*Candlestick*) is removed from the erring shepherds. I here state categorically that the candlestick has already been removed from the Coptic, Orthodox, and neo-Roman Catholic churches (as we saw on 1:20), the Protestant churches and all other so-called 'Christian' churches, like Mormon, Adventist, and all other infidels, schismatics, and heretics which never had a candlestick, never had Jesus, The Bread of Life (*Jn 6:35,48*), present in their midst - ever - because they deny the Seven Sacraments. The same applies to Jews, Muslims and all other non-Christian assemblies.

The church of Ephesus is encouraged to return to the fulness of the Seven Sacraments, and so enter into Paradise, that is, Holy Communion, Holy Co-union with Jesus, the Tree of Life. Holy Communion leads to Eucharistic union in the Holy Trinity.

Warning: *"He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches"* (2:7).

The church of Smyrna.

"And to the angel of the church of Smyrna write: These things says the first and the last, who was dead and is alive, I know your tribulation and your poverty, but you are rich" (2:8).

The church of Smyrna is the martyrdom church, because of their tribulation and poverty, and blasphemy by liars and frauds. However, it must be pointed out that each of the seven 'churches' is the state of our soul at various times in our pilgrimage here on earth, or may even be the cumulative state of our soul at any one time.

'These things says the first and the last, who was dead and is alive,' the one who says this is Petrus Romanus, Eucharistic man. He is the *'first'* because Christ Jesus is living in him, and he in Christ Jesus in Eucharistic oneness. This man was dead in sin at one time, and now through the Seven Sacraments is alive in Christ Jesus, Eucharistic man, and is the

'last' because he is forever with God.

If we look to individual responsibility and examination of self, we may see that even though we are 'apostolic' and 'missionary' in our zeal, we may at the same time suffer rebukes for our fidelity, but yet within ourselves accept the errors of the 'State church' just for convenience sake.

We could at the same time condone and even support the government supplying 'contraception devices' to children and homosexuals in order to 'protect' the child, or the masses, from diseases. We could also at the same time condone and even vote for political candidates who promote abortion - even partial birth abortion whereby the 'doctor' crushes the head of the living baby as it comes out of the uterus. How terribly diabolical!

We could at the same time have doubts about our beliefs, even about the 'Real Presence' of Jesus in Holy Eucharist, and so become protestors, also known as 'protestants.'

When we leave the poverty of our fears and doubts, and return to our faith in the Seven Sacraments, we are rich, we become 'one' as Jesus prayed 'That they all may be one,' that is, we become Eucharistic man in Christ Jesus.

"And you are blasphemed by them that say they are Jews and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan" (2:9).

The church of Smyrna as we said above is the church in martyrdom, who are blasphemed by hypocritical 'Christians' who say they are followers of Jesus Christ, King of the Jews, that is, they say that *'they are Jews and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.'* Such is the state of the majority of 'christians' today.

It is interesting to note in the year 1738, just 21 years after the Freemason satanic organization was formalized in London, England, that Pope Clement XII described Freemasonry as 'Satan's synagogue.'

Freemasonry was founded in 1717, exactly 200 years after the heretic

Father Martin Luther's revolt and final excommunication from the Body of Christ, that is, from True Christendom, and exactly 200 years before Our Blessed Mother appeared in 1917 to the three children in Fatima, Portugal, where She encouraged the faithful to stand firm.

The original traditional true Catholic Church is continuously blasphemed by other sects who call themselves 'Christians,' but in fact they are not 'Christians' they are apostates and are of the synagogue of Satan.

"Fear none of those things which you shall suffer. Behold, the Devil will cast some of you into prison, that you may be tried, and you shall have tribulation ten days. Be you faithful unto death, and I will give you the Crown of Life" (2:10).

The Church martyrdom will have a short tribulation, signified by 'ten days,' meaning that the time is measured and numbered. They are encouraged to stand firm *'faithful unto death,'* in the faith of our fathers. That is, they stand firm in their faith, and they will see the sentence given to the unbelieving and unfaithful, who are condemned to eternal death at the Last Judgement. Again the promise of Jesus Eucharist is given, *'I will give you the Crown of Life,'* that is, the Crowning Glory of the Holy Trinity living in us as Jesus said: "I in them, and Thou (*Father*) in Me, that they may be made perfect in One" (*Jn 17:23*). What greater crown could there be?

"He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches: He that shall overcome shall not be hurt by the second death" (2:11).

The church of Smyrna is encouraged to come into the perfection of Holy Communion, Holy Co-union, Holy Unity in Christ Jesus, because it is impossible for Eucharistic man to *'be hurt by the second death.'* The second death is eternal damnation in Hell. We die the first death in our bodies, we die to self. Those who are condemned to Hell, die the second death, spirit, soul, and body. Jesus said: "Fear ye not them that kill the body, and are not able to kill the soul, but rather fear Him that can destroy both soul and body in hell" (*Mt 10:28*).

Warning: *"He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches" (2:11).*

The church of Pergamus.

“And to the angel of the church of Pergamus write: These things says he that has the sharp two-edged sword” (2:12).

Pergamus is the State church, because it is a collaborator with civil government, in that the government appoints the church leaders, and by having the ‘church’ keep records of activities and donations from church-going members.

Immediately this letter starts out with a stern warning: *‘These things says he that has the sharp two-edged sword...’* Later on in the book it is written: *‘And out of his mouth proceeds a sharp two-edged sword, that with it he may strike the nations. And he shall rule them with a rod of iron, and he treads the winepress of the fierceness of the wrath of God the Almighty’ (Apoc 19:15).* The warning is clear - leave Satan now. Leave the compromise of trying to make ‘the Church of God’ subject to the government ‘church’ of the devil.

“I know where you dwell, where the seat of Satan is. And you hold fast my Name and have not denied my faith. Even in those days when Antipas was faithful witness, who was slain among you, where Satan dwells. But I have against you a few things, because you have there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam who taught Balac to cast a stumblingblock before the children of Israel, to eat and to commit fornication. So have you also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaites. In like manner do penance. If not, I will come to you quickly and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth” (2:13-16).

Petrus Romanus, is not fooled, he knows *‘where you dwell, where the seat of Satan is.’* The modern compromise is all around, even though some *‘hold fast my Name and have not denied my faith.’* There are a few things which God has against those who believe, because they allow the error of civil government to be fostered, and so put **‘a stumblingblock before the children of Israel** (which means the people of God), *to eat and to commit fornication.’* That is to allow error to be promoted, as if a little compromise is for the overall good, forgetting that a little leaven corrupts the whole lump (*Ga 5:9*), and to eat and commit fornication by the distribution of Holy Communion to anyone, not knowing the ‘children of God,’ from the children of the devil.

The State church holds the doctrine of Balaam, whose prophesying was 'bought' for money, so too, the Pergamus church of then, as also today, sold the fidelity of the church, by allowing compromise and error, so that the collection baskets would be full, and the leaders could have tax relief and other temporal benefits.

The Seat of Satan was originally built as the pagan altar to Zeus about 200 B.C. In the 1880's, the (altar to Zeus, king of the gods) 'Seat of Satan' (verse 13 above), was brought from Pergamus to Berlin, Germany. The Germans built a Museum for it, where it remains and is admired by the unlearned to this day. The then antichrist Hitler made a replica of it and often used it as his podium. Please note that the devil does not know the 'day nor the hour' and so he must always have his antichrist and false prophet in place throughout history. Today he has many antichrists and false prophets.

With this thought in mind, let us look at modern events and one person in particular - Barack Hussein Obama. Barack (or Barak) is a Hebrew name which means 'lightning.' The Jews deny Christ, and so are Antichrists. Hussein is a Muslim name, the Muslims deny Christ, and so are Antichrists. Obama has a double barreled Antichrist name. "Little children, it is the last hour, and as you have heard that Antichrist comes, even now there are become many Antichrists, whereby we know that it is the last hour. They went out from us but they were not of us. For if they had been of us, they would no doubt have remained with us: but that they may be manifest, that they are not all of us. Who is a liar, but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? This is Antichrist, who denies the Father and the Son. Whosoever denies the Son, the same has not the Father" (*1Jn 2:18,19,22,23*).

In 2008 Obama addressed the German people (and the world), near the Brandenburg Gate in Berlin, using the setting of the Seat of Satan for his 'foreign policy' speech to the enraptured masses.

His podium was under the statue of 'Victoria, the goddess of victory' who was Satan's charioteer. 'Victoria' is also known as 'Nike,' which in turn means 'the winged goddess of strength, speed and victory'. This

statue faces the Seat of Satan, to whom Obama made his address.



The top of the Brandenburg Gate has a statue of Victoria driving the four horses of the Apocalypse who bring destruction to the people (*Apoc 6:2-8*).

Berlin was a preview of what was to be an outward and public adoration of Satan by the Obama team. After winning the Democratic nomination, he gave his acceptance speech at ‘Mile High Stadium’ in Denver, Colorado, and (like Hitler) used a replica of ‘the king of the gods,’ the Seat of Satan as his backdrop.

There are four things of note which I wish to point out.

1. Denver is a beautiful city built high in the mountains.



2. It is ‘in the air’ and has specific meaning to the rulers of the world, who boast that they control heaven, earth, and under the earth. The Masonic/Zionist/Communist regime control the airport and the security thereof.



3. The murals in the airport depict that they will use whatever force is necessary to obtain the goals of Satan to conquer the world.



4. The rulers have built a city under the airport which is for the ‘elite’ to go when there is a nuclear fallout or other major disaster.

They have set themselves up so that they contradict the word of God: “That in the Name of Jesus every knee should bow, of those that are in heaven, on earth, and under the earth, and that every tongue should confess that the Lord Jesus Christ is in the glory of God the Father” (*Phil 2:10,11*).

Why would Obama choose this place? Because his masters decided it!

Now let us look at the affront to God Almighty, Holy Trinity, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. Compare these the original ‘seat of Satan’ with the Obama’s replica and understand the worship of Satan.





The Satanists have made their presence known and have declared that they are in control and shall not be moved.

It would appear that the USA is the seat of Satan today, as they house the UN, the World Bank, the IMF, and control the police force of the world. Their president is the current Antichrist. We will deal more with the function of Antichrist in chapter 13.

In our personal lives, we make concessions for the sake of peace. Here we are warned: *'In like manner do penance, if not, I will come to you quickly and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.'* The *'sword of my mouth'* is the Spirit of God (*Ep 6:10-17*).

"To him that overcomes I will give the hidden Manna and will give him a white counter, and in the counter, a new name written, which no man knows but he that receives it" (2:17).

The *'hidden Manna'* is Jesus coming to us in Holy Communion, and as we receive Him more often, He grows within us in Spirit, bringing us to perfect unity in Him, that is, He brings us to *'perfect man,'* Eucharistic man.

There is an admonition: The church of Pergamus is encouraged to leave the error of duplicity of doctrines and receive the extra graces to enter into the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church which is heaven on earth, and

be acquitted (*the white stone*) of all sins. In ancient times, when people went to court, the vindicated were given a white stone as a sign of their being innocent of crimes, (a white stone was also given to people who were promoted to some dignified post or honor). A black stone was given to those who were condemned or found guilty at a trial. The '*new name*' is Eucharistic man, which only those who receive it will know it and its meaning. The '*new name*' is the eternal reward in Heaven, which is rejected and scoffed at by heretics and others who deny Christ and His Seven Sacraments.

Warning: "*He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches*" (2:17).

The church of Thyatira.

"And to the angel of the church of Thyatira write: These things saith the son of God, who has his eyes like to a flame of fire and his feet like to fine brass (2:18).

This is the combination 'church and state' church, because even though some have faith, the rest allow the government (*Jezebel, for example, paying for fornication with public funding - paying for contraceptives to give to children, and paying for abortions*) to control them, pretending to be in favor of the law of God, which in truth they are trying to destroy it.

'These things says the son of God, who has his eyes like to a flame of fire, and his feet like to fine brass.' We said before that his 'eyes were as a flame of fire,' because he has received the wisdom and knowledge of God. '*His feet like unto fine brass,*' because he is given the eternal permanence of God, and fulfills His plan of creation from all eternity, and unto the eternity which never ends. We said before that the son of God, not the Son of God is speaking, because it is written: "He that shall overcome shall possess these things, and I will be his God, and he shall be My son," as cited earlier, Jesus Christ is already the Son of God. Those who receive Him in Holy Eucharist become the '*sons of God,*' because they are 'born of God.'

Eucharistic man has overcome, and is the possession of Jesus, the Father of the world which is come, and is therefore, *the son of God*, the son of

Christ Jesus. Jesus Christ only, and He alone “is the Head of the Body, the Church, Who is the Beginning, the Firstborn from the dead,” and it is Christ Jesus Who only in all things holds the primacy (*Col 1:18*), which He holds in oneness with Petrus Romanus, His Monarch.

Again it is stated before that Jesus said: ‘Amen, amen, I say to you, he that believes in Me, the works that I do, he also shall do, and greater than these shall he do,’ so then these works now being fulfilled are the ‘greater things,’ being done by Eucharistic man, who is the revelation of Jesus Christ.

“I know your works, and your faith, and your charity, and your ministry, and your patience, and your last works, which are more than the former” (2:19).

We are warned that even though we do good things, and have great charity, and pray, and that our *later works are more than the former*, these are not enough! If we allow error to be taught, and do not condemn it, we are guilty of that error (*Rm 1:32*).

“But I have against thee a few things, because you suffer the woman Jezebel, who calls herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants, to commit fornication and to eat of things sacrificed to idols, and I gave her a time that she might do penance, and she will not repent of her fornication” (2:20,21).

The errors being taught and spread by the so-called ‘Christian’ governments with the sanction of the various churches, is condemned. This sad unity is called ‘Jezebel.’ Jezebel promotes abortion, homosexuality, same sex ‘marriages’, the ‘rights of man’ over the rights of God. If we support or vote for these issues and hold our peace and do not object, we are Jezebels.

The warning to repent has not been heeded and then we see that the whole world will be in great tribulation, as is written: *“Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and they that commit adultery with her shall be in very great tribulation, except they do penance from their deeds, and I will kill her children with death, and all the churches shall know that I am he that searches the soul and hearts, and I will give to every one of you*

according to your works” (2:22,23).

To vote for satanic issues is to commit adultery. The churches are warned. The people are warned. You are warned, get rid of your Jezebel. “Know you not that we shall judge angels?” (1Co 6:3). Eucharistic man is given this responsibility.

“But to you I say and to the rest who are at Thyatira: ‘Whosoever have not this doctrine and who have not known the depths of Satan,’ as they say, I will not put upon you any other burden” (2:24).

In saying this, we are told that the little bit of truth which we have, we must hold fast to it. Those of us who have not studied the ‘doctrine’ of Judaism, of Freemasonry, of Communism, of Islam, and all the other schools of satanic inculcation, which brings those students into the very depths of satanic worship, are exhorted to stay away from them, and hold fast to the doctrine of Jesus Christ as taught in Holy Scripture. The only acceptable Bible in the English Language today is the Douay Rheims Bible (Pre-Vatican II version), all the rest are a tower of Babel of bibles of Satan’s confusion.

“Yet that which you have, hold fast till I come” (2:25).

We are encouraged to return to the truth of the early Catholic Church, before the errors of man, as in Protestantism and Vatican II, replaced the teachings of Jesus. Read the Bible, practice and live the Ten Commandments and the Seven Sacraments of the Church.

Here now comes one of the great promises of the Apocalypse!

“He that shall overcome and keep my words unto the end, I will give him power over the nations, and he shall rule them with a rod of iron, and as the vessel of a potter they shall be broken, as I also have received of my Father. And I will give him the Morning Star” (2:26-28).

Saint John saw here the final battle, the battle of the ages, and those who stood firm in the Ten Commandments and the Seven Sacraments given to us by Jesus, being given command over the physical and spiritual nations of the world, demonstrating the supernatural and supra-national Kingship of Christ, this power comes to us in Holy Eucharist, and only in Holy Eucharist.

By *overcoming* the invitation or the enticements of political and religious leaders to join their sordid way of thinking, ruling, behaving, and bribery, and by holding fast the words of Jesus in spite of dungeon, fire, and sword, Jesus will give you *power over the nations*. These nations are the political entities of the world, but even more than that, they are the nations of evil spirits who presently have control over the world - but not for long, I say.

What is the '*Morning Star*'? The '*Morning Star*' is that small bright light which begins to light up the darkness of the sky, and grows brighter and brighter until the darkness is dispelled, and the Day Star (*Jesus*) comes with the fulness of brightness, and all the darkness is banished. So too, this '*Morning Star*' which Jesus promises us, arises in our hearts (*2P 1:19*), and grows to fulness, driving out all doubts, fears, and evil opposition to everything that is good. This '*Morning Star*' is Holy Eucharist Christ Jesus. This '*Morning Star*' is for you to reach out and take. Overcome the evil, come into the Good. Rule with Jesus, it is your inheritance, if you care to have it.

There is an admonition: The church of Thyatira while it is generally condemned, has a few faithful who remain true, and these are encouraged to persevere, for their trials bring forth fruit unto Life Everlasting. Warning: "*He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches*" (*2:29*).

Chapter 3

Sardis, Philadelphia, and Laodicea

The church of Sardis.

“And to the angel of the church of Sardis write: These things says he that has the seven spirits of God, and the seven stars: I know your works, and that you have the name of being alive, and you are dead. Be watchful and strengthen the things that remain, which are ready to die, for I find not your works full before my God” (3:1,2).

Sardis is the combination of all the Protestant and other cultist churches, because they claim that they are *alive*, but are *dead*, and are admonished to *watch and strengthen the very few things that remain, which are ready to die*. They deny the Real Presence of Jesus in the Holy Eucharist, this is their death. Jesus said at the Last Supper of the Bread which He consecrated: “This is My Body” (*Mt 26:26*), yet Protestants say: “No it is not.” They are dead!

When true believers in Holy Communion, receive Jesus with any stain of sin on their soul, they at that reception deny the Passion, Death and Resurrection of Jesus, and so they join with all the Protestant and other unbelieving cults in persecuting the victorious Christ.

This stern warning is a shot across the bow of the ships of pseudo ‘Christians,’ and is an exhortation to return to the truth of the first followers of Christ. We have received and heard of Salvation as is written down in Holy Writ. These writings have been changed and adjusted by modernists who want to make the Bible ‘more understandable,’ since in their opinion God did not know how to reach us.

In addition to the collective efforts by scripture scholars to ‘simplify,’ private individuals have joined in the act of making interpretations according to their own desires. These are the times of which we have been well warned: “Know also this, that in the last days shall come dangerous times” (*2T 3:1*). We now live in those ‘dangerous times.’ The denial of Jesus Christ Holy Eucharist, is followed by denial of the Seven Sacraments, then the Ten Commandments, and after that nothing remains

but death.

“Have in mind therefore in what manner you have received and heard, and observe and do penance. If then you shall not watch, I will come to you as a thief, and you shall not know at what hour I will come to you” (3:2,3).

As all churches and people have gone astray, we are told to observe and *do penance*. (Incidentally, the word ‘penance’ is not to be found in any Protestant bible. It appears 66 times in the original Douay Rheims). Every public church in existence in the world today is as the church of Sardis. They are warned that they do not really know Jesus Eucharist, and so they must return to the truth or else, on a sudden, they will lose all they have, or think they have.

“But you have a few names in Sardis which have not defiled their garments, and they shall walk with me in white, because they are worthy” (3:4).

There are thankfully a few individuals in the universe today, known as ‘*a few names*’ who have not bought into the universal error of the ‘disposal society’ and ‘God for sale’ and have truly sought Him with love in their hearts. Their reward is that they *‘shall walk with me in white, because they are worthy,’* that is, they shall walk in immaculacy in the white of the transfigured Christ Jesus, Eucharistic man.

The rest of the population are asked to leave error behind, and overcome the attractions of public acclaim. There is a victory celebration awaiting those who have the courage to set themselves apart from error, and set themselves free:

“He that shall overcome shall thus be clothed in white garments, and I will not blot out his name out of the Book of Life. And I will confess his name before my Father and before His angels” (3:5).

What a beautiful and phenomenal gift!

There is an admonition: The church of Sardis must leave error behind and return to the truth. There are however, a few people who have not denied Jesus Eucharist and are encouraged to walk in Jesus Truth, wearing *white*, the mystical color of victory and happiness with Jesus.

Warning: “*He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches*” (3:6).

The church of Philadelphia.

“*And to the angel of the church of Philadelphia write: These things says the Holy one, and the True one, he that has the key of David, he that opens and no man shuts, shuts and no man opens*” (3:7).

This is the missionary church, because they enter into the open door which God creates for them to enter and live the Truth of the Seven Sacraments. Obedience is firm, it cannot be altered, it cannot be moved. It is constant. They have been obedient and have kept the Word of God pure, and they have confronted the synagogue of Satan. Part of this synagogue is the ‘ecumenical’ church along with all those apostate and protesting churches who have denied the Seven Sacraments of the Church and/or the Primacy of Peter.

‘*These things says...he that has the key of David, he that opens and no man shuts, shuts and no man opens.*’ The key of David is faith, obedience, and courage to stand in the faith of God. We cited before that Jesus said: ‘Have the faith of God,’ and in believing and exercising the Seven Sacraments, we enter into the narrow door, which is what we were told to do in the first place: “Enter ye in at the narrow gate, for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leads to destruction, and many there are who go in thereat” (*Mt 7:13*). Our strength is in the Sacraments which have been given us to observe, practice, live, and to grow therein. These Sacraments are food to our soul and give us our fortitude to persevere against the foes of Christ who seek the easy, but Satanical way of life.

Petrus Romanus has been given the title of *the Holy one, and True one, who has the key of David*; that is, being the son of David, and he is sat down with Jesus in His Throne, and Christ Jesus is the Head of the Church (*Ep 4:15*), and He has given Petrus Romanus the supreme power over it. It is He, Jesus Christ, Who opened the gate of salvation, and no one shuts it against His appointed Authority. By ‘*the key*’ is also understood teaching with infallibility the faith and morals of the Church, and the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, for Petrus Romanus has both. To the Church on earth is entrusted the keys (*ecclesiastical power*) and

whatever is bound or loosened by Petrus Romanus is ratified by Jesus in the Kingdom of His Glory. Jesus said: “I say to thee: That thou art Peter; and upon this rock I will build My Church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it, and I will give to you the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven. And whatsoever you shall bind upon earth, it shall be bound also in Heaven, and whatsoever you shall loose on earth, it shall be loosed also in Heaven” (*Mt 16:18,19*). We will see in Chapter 4:2 that this authority has been transferred to Petrus Romanus because of the errors and heresies of the recent Vicars of Christ.

It follows that those who have entered into Eucharistic unity in Christ Jesus, which is, God in man and man in God, that to the particular Eucharistic man Petrus Romanus, is given the power, and authority, and dominion to bring all of creation to complete oneness in Christ Jesus.

The key of David has a very grave warning to whomsoever it is given. In the following passage from Isaiah, we see Eliacim as a figure of Christ, being given the fulfilment of Judaism which is Christianity. We shall also see in verse 25 that the key is removed from leaders of the church of Christianity. “It shall come to pass in that day, that I will call My servant Eliacim (*Christ and also Christianity*), the son of Helciah, and I will clothe him with your robe (*Judaism*), and will strengthen him with your girdle (*Levitical priesthood*), and will give your power into his hand, and he shall be as a father to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and to the house of Judah. And I will lay *the key of the house of David* upon his shoulder, and he shall open, and none shall shut, and he shall shut, and none shall open. And I will fasten him as a peg in a sure place, and he shall be for a throne of glory to the house of his father (*the gates of hell shall not prevail against it*). And they shall hang upon him all the glory of his father’s house, divers kinds of vessels, every little vessel, from the vessels of cups even to every instrument of music. (*Now comes the warning*): In that day (*the era of multiple ‘Christian churches’ and Vatican II Ecumenism*), says the Lord of Hosts, shall the peg be removed, that was fastened in the sure place, and it shall be broken and shall fall, and that which hung thereon, shall perish, because the Lord has spoken it” (*Is 22:20-25*).

In removing the ‘peg’ (that is the authority of the ‘Pope of Rome, the

Vicar of Christ') Almighty God prepares the way for doing a 'new thing.' Jesus, the Christ, the Messiah, had asked His disciples to leave all things and follow Him, as it is written: "He went forth and saw a publican named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custom, and He said to him: 'Follow Me.' And leaving all things, he rose up and followed Him" (*Lk 5:27,28*). He said to His disciples: "If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow Me" (*Mt 16:24*). The opposite has happened in Christianity. In the years around 450 AD, the Coptic (Egyptian) Church was formed in heresy, disobedience, murder, and brutality. They denied and still deny the Primacy of Peter, claiming that St. Mark the Evangelist established the Papacy in Alexandria.

The major dispute with the Greek Orthodox Church came in 857 when Ignatius, the duly lawfully appointed Patriarch of Constantinople, refused to give Holy Communion to a man called Bardus who was committing incest with his own step-daughter. (Bardus was the uncle and close confidant of the Emperor Michael III, known as Michael the Drunkard). Ignatius was banished, and an unscrupulous man called Photius was made Patriarch. This man was a layman when he was 'elected,' and made bishop within six days, and 'consecrated' by a bishop who had been deposed by Rome for 'inappropriate' behavior. The error of Photius has never been corrected. When the raiding Muslims captured Constantinople, the Sultan Mahomet II, appointed a heretic named Gregory Scholarius as the Patriarch. Peace with Rome was never been restored. The questions of religious practice and beliefs were secondary to the corruption within the 'church of the east.'

Protestantism was founded by a very intellectual and brilliant Augustinian monk, and Doctor of Theology, Father Martin Luther. He said to Pope Julius II: "I will not serve," left the Roman Catholic Church, and married an ex nun, Katharina von Bora. At the time of their marriage, Katharina was 26 years old and Luther was 41 years old. He had five children by her. He was formally excommunicated in 1520. He founded his own church, his own bible, and followed the example of the Jews (who did not believe in Jesus, the Messiah, the Son of God), and came up with the present error of a 90% bible with seven books, plus 4 chapters, plus another 65 verses missing. His 'Lutheran' church gave way to a

proliferation of some 30,000 different Protestant ‘churches’ with numerous ‘bibles’ based on the Luther bible, giving Satan his desired tower of Babel of bibles.

The neo-Roman Catholic Church left the faith of Jesus at the Second Vatican Council (1962 - ‘65), which hijacked the structure, and the name, and became just another Protestant ‘Christian Church’ under the umbrella of error. Their rebellion against the word of God both oral and written is pathetic. Scripture says: “Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions, which you have learned, whether by word or by our epistle” (2Th 2:14), but that Council could not hijack the faith of the people, the people who have the faith of God. Since that infamous ‘council’ there have been many breakaway ‘Catholic churches’ following the Protestant examples of error. (I have included these break aways in the above 30,000 number).

It was necessary then that Jesus would declare: “Behold, I make all things new” (Apoc 21:5). However, as long as at least one valid Mass is celebrated in the world each day, then the ‘gates of hell’ shall not and have not prevailed’ against the original Church. Jesus Christ is the Head of the Church. I assure you that a valid Mass is said every day and ‘the gates of hell’ have not and shall not prevail!

“I know your works. Behold, I have given before you a door opened, which no man can shut, because you have a little strength and have kept my word and have not denied my Name” (3:8).

We are encouraged to persevere and not deny the Name of Jesus Eucharist. We enter into the door of protection of the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, where a valid Mass is celebrated every day, and there we abide throughout the Great Tribulation!

“Behold, I will bring of the synagogue of Satan, who say they are Jews and are not, but do lie. Behold, I will make them to come and adore before your feet. And they shall know that I have loved you” (3:9).

This states that ‘the synagogue of Satan’ comprises of those who say they are ‘Christians’ but in truth they are hypocrites. They profess to follow Jesus, King of the Jews, but follow the lusts of their own desires. The

church of Philadelphia has many such scoundrel members, and the Apocalypse calls them *'liars.'* The time will come when the truth shall be known universally, at that time, the *'liars'* will come on bended knees beseeching the truth and seek to be allowed entry into the Kingdom of Truth. Jesus loves His own, Eucharistic man.

"Because you have kept the word of my patience, I will also keep you from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon the whole world to try them that dwell upon the earth" (3:10).

God protects His own, and in this verse through His Eucharistic Authority, He gives His Divine promise. In the time of the Great Tribulation, those who accept the fulness of Jesus Eucharist, will be sheltered under the covert of His wings (*Ps 62:8*).

"Behold, I come quickly, hold fast that which you have, that no man take your crown" (3:11).

Under instructions from the Lord, Petrus Romanus comes quickly with the power to execute all he has received from Christ Jesus! Remember that once the Great Tribulation starts, all will be done quickly. The conclusion will come after a little more than three and a half years of bone crushing, starving, persecuting, and torturous times. Some will fall to the enticements of ease and error, but the prayerful will remain valiant and steadfast.

"He that shall overcome, I will make him a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go out no more. And I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the City of my God, the New Jerusalem, which comes down out of Heaven from my God, and my new Name (3:12).

The Monarch is here reaching out to those courageous and steadfast believers and practitioners in the word of God, that is, living the Seven Sacraments, and readily see the reward of being *'a pillar, having His Name...'* Here we will see as Saint John saw: "the Holy City, the New Jerusalem, coming down out of Heaven from God" (*Apoc 21:2*).

The few who have striven, and who have entered by the narrow gate into the Kingdom of God on earth as it is in Heaven, and who have overcome the last vicious attempts of the Devil and his so-called 'Christian'

believers to ‘convert’ to their easy sordid way of living, are now safe and secure, as *pillars* of example and faith, standing, never more to fall, go out of grace, or succumb to the sins and errors of evil.

‘*my new Name*’ is the name of the new man, Eucharistic man. The *City of God* (*Ps 45:5*) is the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, which fulfills the Lord’s Prayer: “Father, Thy Kingdom come, Thy Will be done, in earth, as it is in Heaven” (*Mt 6:8-10*). The new name signifies God making all things new.

There is an admonition: The few faithful members in the church of Philadelphia are encouraged to continue to seek entry by the narrow door (the Seven Sacraments), despite the majority of *the synagogue of Satan who blaspheme them*. They are told to *hold fast*, and do not allow those who are in error to persuade them otherwise.

..

Warning: “*He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches*” (3:13).

The church of Laodicea.

“*And to the angel of the church of Laodicea write: These things says the Amen, the faithful and true witness, who is the beginning of the creation of God. I know your works, that you are neither cold nor hot. I would you were cold or hot. But because you are lukewarm and neither cold nor hot, I will begin to vomit you out of my mouth. Because you say: ‘I am rich and made wealthy and have need of nothing,’ and know not that you are wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked*” (3:14-17).

‘*These things says the Amen*’ recalls 1:6,7, and states that Truth speaks, that there is no argument to be made contradicting the statement, it is a fact, so be it. Here the Petrus Romanus is quoting Jesus.

Laodicea is the apostate church in these, the latter days, who *are neither cold nor hot* in their love for God, but are the lukewarm whom God *begins to vomit out of His mouth*. This ‘*begins*’ means that those who reject this message, He begins to vomit them out. They attach God to wealth and ease of living, thinking that their wealth will buy them

Heaven. This ‘church’ is to be found most powerfully in the ‘state churches’ such as the church of England, Orthodox churches of Russia, Greece, and other state controlled churches, such as ‘The church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints,’ also known as Mormons, and many others. These people have been born into a heritage handed down to them from their parents. They, as are all religions, advised to reconsider their standing, and change.

‘These things says the Amen, the faithful and true witness, who is the beginning of the creation of God.’ What is the beginning of the creation of God? Let us look a little further. ‘The beginning of the creation...’ not the beginning of creation,’ and so Jesus Christ is not the one speaking. Looking further we know from our Creed that Jesus Christ is the Second Person of the Holy Trinity, One in Being with the Father, the Only-begotten Son of God (*Jn 1:18*), born of the Father before all ages, God of God, Light of Light, true God of true God, begotten, not made (*Jn 3:18*), being of one substance with the Father, by Whom all things were made (*Col 1:16*), Who for us men, and for our salvation came down from Heaven, and was incarnate by the Holy Ghost of the Virgin Mary, and was made Man (*Jn 1:14*).

If Jesus was ‘*the beginning of the creation*’ of God, then He would have been created along with other forms created on the first six days of creation. Such a thought is preposterous. To create means to bring into existence. To beget means to produce; made; to cause something to be or to come about. Man was created in the heart of the Father before the angels, lights, and earth were made. Jesus Christ, the Son of Mary, was begotten in the heart of the Father in eternity, as it is written: “With Thee is the principality in the day of Thy strength, in the brightness of the saints, from the womb before the day star, I begot Thee” (*Ps 109:3*). This saying ‘before the day star’ is alluded to by Saint Paul when he writes: “...which was given us in Christ Jesus before the times of the world” (*2T 1:9*), and again: “Unto the hope of life everlasting, which God, Who lies not, has promised before the times of the world” (*Titus 1:2*). Then what do we say? Jesus Christ gave to His believers the power to be made the sons of God, to those who believe in His Name. These ‘sons of God’ are those who have believed in His every word, in His every Sacrament, have

become Eucharistic in Christ Jesus, and so are the beginning of the creation of God.

'These things says the Amen' is the fulfilment of God's plan to make man in His Own Image and Likeness too. Now it is done. This is truth. Amen.

When Petrus Romanus reminds the church of Laodicea that he is *the beginning of the creation*, he is reminding them that God created man in His heart in eternity, that is, redeemed man is the beginning of all the creation of God. He is saying here that those false rulers must submit to God's Will, to God's Law, and to God's Word - or else. Petrus Romanus condemns all the 'politically correct' of the churches that 'political correctness' is an abomination. He calls such ones *'wretched and miserable.'*

"I counsel you to buy of me gold, fire tried, that you may be made rich and may be clothed in white garments, and that the shame of your nakedness may not appear. And anoint your eyes with eyesalve, that you may see" (3:18).

'Gold' spiritually means the 'goodness of God.' Petrus Romanus pleads with them to come to him and receive true riches which are the Seven Sacraments, victory in Christ (*white garments*).

"Such as I love, I rebuke and chastise. Be zealous therefore and do penance" (3:19).

He will allow them to suffer *rebukes* from their colleagues as they convert to the truth, but they must endure and do penance, and come into Eucharistic unity in Christ Jesus.

"Behold, I stand at the gate and knock. If any man shall hear my voice and open to me the door, I will come in to him and will sup with him: and he with me" (3:20).

Petrus Romanus does not give up his efforts for the lukewarm and cowards to convert. He continuously *stands at the door* of their heart, knocking, pleading, and encouraging by example. If they come to him, he will still give them honor in the sight of God, and in Heavenly glory, that is, through Holy Communion, He will help bring them to Eucharistic

unity in Christ Jesus.

“To him that shall overcome, I will give to sit with me in my throne: as I also have overcome and am set down with my Father in His Throne” (3:21).

‘To him that shall overcome’ is not a statement of proposed failure, but one of confidence that in the message of the Gospel, all can be victorious. He invites them to come and sit down with him in the Throne of God, a point we shall deal further with in chapter 4. *‘As I also have overcome’* is Eucharistic man, who has overcome the assaults from the devil, as well as the multitudinous errors of the many ‘christian’ churches, he pleads with all on earth to come to Christ Jesus, the Father of the world which is come, through the Seven Sacraments.

In every church today, there are those who are of the church of Laodicea. There is an admonition: The church of Laodicea in spite of thinking that they are politically correct with God, through Petrus Romanus He still encourages them to listen to the voice of God as He knocks on the door of their heart, and calls them to return to Him. Jesus tells them that He will still give them a Throne of glory in Heaven, if they will open up to Him.

Warning: *“He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches” (3:22).*

If we look closely at all the religions in the world today, we will see that the ‘members’ may be divided into four main categories:

1. The fervent believers who hold fast to what they were born into, or ‘converted’ to.
2. The casual believer, who practice or attend their institution periodically.
3. The nominal ‘believer’ who seldom if ever attend ‘church,’ synagogue, mosque, except maybe for funerals and weddings.
4. The violent ‘believer’ who are political activists with no respect for God, life, or decency. These are a disgrace to ‘religion,’ and to the ‘church’ they proclaim to represent. Politicians and terrorists are the main members in this category.

In the Great Tribulation which we will deal with later on, the greater majority of the members in group #1 will be the people who will immediately 'leave all behind' and follow Jesus, the Messiah. They will see and recognize the truth, and convert.

Some of the members of #2 will convert after enduring great hardship. Very few of the members of #3 may convert with difficulty. Almost all of the group in #4 will perish.

See hear the parable of Jesus: "The sower went out to sow his seed. And as he sowed, some fell by the way side. And it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it. (#4).

And other some fell upon a rock. And as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it had no moisture. (#3).

And other some fell among thorns. And the thorns growing up with it, choked it. (#2).

And other some fell upon good ground and, being sprung up, yielded fruit a hundredfold. (#1).

He that has ears to hear, let him hear" (*Lk 8:5-8*).

Chapter 4

Vision of a throne set in heaven

“After these things I looked, and behold a door was opened in heaven, and the first voice which I heard, as it were, of a trumpet speaking with me, said: ‘Come up here, and I will show you the things which must be done hereafter’” (4:1).

Note well here that Saint John sees that ‘*a door was opened in heaven,*’ and not as a door was opened to Heaven. Was it Heaven come on earth as in the Lord’s prayer? No! That prayer will be fulfilled later, and remember that Saint Paul said: “I know a man in Christ, above fourteen years ago (whether in the body, I know not, or out of the body, I know not, God knows), such a one caught up to the Third Heaven...was caught up into Paradise and heard secret words which it is not granted to man to utter” (2Co 12:2,4).

This heaven is very different, and so where is it? It is up there somewhere! Saint John was told: ‘*Come up here...*’ Remember that the Lord said to Moses: “Behold Heaven is the Lord’s thy God, and the Heaven of heaven, the earth and all things that are therein” (Dt 10:14). The Psalmist King David said: “The Heaven of heaven is the Lord’s, but the earth He has given to the children of men” (Ps 113:16). My point in stating these descriptions is to point out that this *heaven* is identified as ‘*heaven*’ which belongs to Heaven, a kind of sub-domain so to speak. Originally this ‘*heaven*’ was supposed to be the One True Holy Catholic and Apostolic Church, but because of dissension and error, it was necessary for God to fulfill His promise: “Behold I do new things, and now they shall spring forth, verily you shall know them: I will make a way in the wilderness, and rivers in the desert” (Is 43:19), and this ‘*heaven*’ is the Sanctuary of the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, which is the fulfilment and completion of the above mentioned original Catholic Church.

When Saint John was told to ‘*Come up here*’ he was told to come out of the earthly church corrupted by man and ascend into the Eucharistic Church created by God and not having man’s carnal input. In coming up

to this Church, obviously he would be immediately in the spirit of God.

Dealing with this Eucharistic Church, authority has been given by Christ to the putting to an end all controversy concerning His True Church. His decision was the actual sealing of the Body of Christ with the Name of God, and has given to His anointed commission to act by the same authority. This Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church that has known nothing of man or human constitution is born, and is now in existence. This Eucharistic Church is foretold by the Prophet Daniel: "Thus thou saw, till a stone was cut out of a mountain without hands: and it struck the statue upon the feet thereof that were of iron and clay, and broke them in pieces. Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of a summer's threshing floor, and they were carried away by the wind, and there was no place found for them, but the stone that struck the statue became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth" (*Dn 2:34,3*). The statue is all the various 'churches' of 'Christendom', members of the 'house divided against itself, which of course cannot stand' (*Mt 12:25*).

We again address the subject of Eucharistic man, and the Eucharistic Church. A transition has taken place from the old man to the new man who is Eucharistic man - the new creature (*2Co 5:17*). A transition means that there is a process of changing from one state, substance or condition to another. During the period of such change, an individual may notice certain characteristics within himself changing.

In dealing with the spiritual aspects of this particular transition we seek to be 'perfect as also our Heavenly Father is perfect' (*Mt 5:48*). God never gave us a command which was impossible for us to keep. Therefore in order to 'be perfect' there is a total reliance on the gift from God the Father and of the Holy Ghost, Who teaches us all things whatsoever Jesus has told us (*Jn 14:26*). The only way to being 'perfect' is through the gift given to us of the Seven Sacraments of the Church, which are the Keys of the Kingdom (*Mt 16:19*). The specific Sacraments used in this personal transition to co-union and Eucharistic unity in God are the Sacraments of Holy Communion and Confirmation. Scripture is specific about this: "As many as received Him, He gave them power to be made the sons of God,

to them that believe in His Name, who are born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God” (*Jn 1:12,13*). It goes without saying that one must be in the state of grace (through Holy Confessions) in order to come into the perfection of the sons of God. When this transition is complete, then comes that perfection which was foretold: “There shall be declared to the Lord a generation to come, and the heavens shall show forth His justice to a people that shall be born, which the Lord has made” (*Ps 21:32*).

Saint Paul elaborates on this when he says: “Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promise of Life which is in Christ Jesus” (*2T 1:1*), and this Life is Eucharistic oneness in Christ Jesus in His glorious Resurrection from the old man (*the dead*). He takes us from Jesus Christ to Christ Jesus in the same sentence, elaborating on ‘Life in Him.’ This Life is Eucharistic oneness in Him, and this Eucharistedness is ‘*Christ in you the hope of Glory,*’ explained below.

The apostle goes on to expand and explain the promise of Life: “...whereof I am made a minister according to the dispensation of God, which is given me towards you, that I may fulfil the word of God, the mystery which has been hidden from ages and generations, but now is manifested to His saints, to whom God would make known the riches of the glory of this Sacrament among the Gentiles, which is Christ, in you the hope of glory, Whom we preach, admonishing every man and teaching every man in all wisdom, that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus. Wherein also I labour, striving according to His working which He works in me in power” (*Col 1:25-29*). St. Paul had not achieved this Eucharistedness as is evident when he ‘labours and strives,’ but he certainly knew the meaning of this extraordinary Sacrament as he strives for this ‘*hope of glory.*’

The next question would be: What or where is this *door*? This *door* is the opening to a never ending spectacular revelation of ‘*things*’ which only God the Creator would now do and display through His Monarch Petrus Romanus, who is speaking to Saint John.

It is now time to identify this Monarch. In order to do this we turn to ‘The

Prophecies of Saint Malachy,' which is a list of Popes from Celestine II (1143-1144) "to the end of the world." The Popes are not identified by name, but are described in symbolic terms. Malachy wrote them while he was in Rome, showed them to Pope Innocent II (1130-1143).

There is only one true pope after Pope Benedict XVI, and that is "Petrus Romanus." Saint Malachy says of him in the only commentary of any of the popes foretold: "In the final persecution of the S.R.E. (The Latin initials for Holy Roman Church), there will reign Peter the Roman, who will feed his flock among many tribulations; after which the seven hilled city will be destroyed and the dreadful Judge will judge the people" (*Prophecies of St. Malachy, p. 96*).

Consider when he says '*In the final persecution*' that the word '*final*' acknowledges that the Church has always been persecuted, so that there is a last persecution which will end in the final defeat of Satan and all the persecutors of the Church. This final persecution is the time of the Great Tribulation. It is interesting to note that Saint Malachy does not use the term 'Catholic,' but the Holy Roman Church, thus signifying a new name.

I do not believe that Petrus Romanus will necessarily be from Rome, but that he will be an original pre-Vatican II type of believing Catholic, because he says '*the Holy Roman Church.*' I believe that he will be elected or appointed true Pope, and that he will be the last Pope to reign until the end of time, and he will lead the Church into the New Garden of Eden. The common interpretation of '*the seven hilled city*' is Rome, but I would urge caution on this and also include the destruction of the seven deadly sins, which will happen when the devil is cast into hell for all eternity.

If we look at the name in more detail and divide it into it's two component parts, we will see that *Petrus* is the Latin name for Peter, taken from the Latin word *petra* meaning a *rock*, or *stone*. Jesus said: "Thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build My Church..." (*Mt 16:18*) thus confirming Peter as Priest, and the Vicar of Christ upon earth.

When St. Malachy, under the inspiration of the Holy Ghost, calls Peter ‘*Romanus*,’ he is also identifying him as secular and temporal ruler over the earth, that is King or Monarch. *Romanus* is the Latin word for Roman, which is taken from the title of the Latin city called ‘*Roma*’ which in turn means ‘strength.’ Petrus Romanus, spiritually strong as a rock, is Priest and Monarch over the whole earth.

Throughout the Apocalypse I will endeavour to identify in which capacity Petrus Romanus is operating, in ecclesiastical (*Petrus*) or temporal (*Romanus*), being aware that he is always both.

To speculate on the identity of Petrus Romanus is folly, but suffice to say that he will not be in the mold of the popes after Pope Pius XII, but will be fully Eucharisted, identified by his true devotion to Jesus Eucharist, will encourage adoration of the Blessed Sacrament, will not be a post Vatican ecumenical liberal, will have persisted with celebrating the Triditine Mass (in the language of each country), and still have been in obedience to the Chair of Peter. He need not be a Cardinal, and need not be of the Vatican II Roman Catholic Church, but would be a traditional and original Catholic.

For more on this see Appendix I.

Saint John had said earlier: ‘I was in the spirit’ (1:10), and now he begins to explain more about the urgency, and the meaning, and the understanding by saying: “*And immediately I was in the spirit*” (4:2). As I said before, he had to be in the spirit of God in order to come up into the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church.

This instantaneous ‘*immediate*’ is given to us to show that when all begins to unfold of what is written, it will be done immediately, and by Petrus Romanus, who in this case is the ‘*the voice as it were of a trumpet*’ who said: ‘*Come up here.*’ Throughout this book I will at times be interchanging the names Petrus Romanus and the Great Monarch as it is the same person.

“And behold, there was a throne set in heaven...and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald...and in the sight of

the ...was, as it were, a sea of glass like to crystal” (4:2,3,6^a).

‘a throne set in heaven...and One sitting’ that is Christ Jesus sitting on a throne which is not in Heaven because this throne is *‘set’* meaning it is a new setting, and He is judging His Church, to which He gave Saint Peter and his successors the keys.

This *rainbow* was not like the rainbow which God set in the clouds for the covenant with Noah, when He said: “This is the sign of the covenant which I give between Me and you, and to every living soul that is with you, for perpetual generations. I will set My bow in the clouds, and it shall be the sign of a covenant between Me and between the earth” (*Gn 9:12,13*). This *‘rainbow round about the throne...like unto an emerald’* has a very fixed and permanent meaning. An emerald is a gemstone of brilliant and exclusive qualities, while a rainbow which we see in the clouds although brilliant and magnificently beautiful, is transitory, visible one moment and gone the next. The *rainbow* around this throne is God’s mercy, and brings us into the fulfilled promise of God in making man to His Own Image and Likeness (*Gn 1:26*). This is now the promised unity of God in man, and man in God, in all permanence and excelling beauty. This is the new creature which will never die. This is Eucharistic man. This is Eucharistic man in his natural and permanent habitat. This is the final victory of the unity of God in man, over Satan and his evil minions.

When it says: *‘and in the sight of the throne was, as it were, a sea of glass like to crystal,’* we now advance to the universality of God’s Master Plan. We see this clear glass like to crystal, not as a fragile thing like any window-glass, nor as to a semi-permanent gem such as crystal, but as a full foundation bringing the new man into ease and knowledge of the entire limitless universe. We sometimes interpret this ‘sea of glass’ quite correctly as ‘the sea faith,’ which later will not be necessary, for it says: ‘the sea is now no more’ (*Apoc 21:1*). This sea of glass in the sight of the throne is the vision and place where only Eucharistic man, saints and angels can dwell with the Holy Trinity, in the Mystical Body of Christ.

“...And upon the throne One sitting. And He that sat was to the sight like the jasper and the sardine stone” (4:2,3).

Earlier we saw ‘on the Throne’, and ‘in the Throne’, and now ‘upon the throne.’ Here it is pointing out to a specific time and event, ‘upon’ and

event which will shortly change.

We saw earlier that it was said: “To him that shall overcome, I will give to sit with me in my throne, as I also have overcome and am set down with my Father in His Throne” (*Apoc 3:21*). So now, what is the ‘throne,’ and who is sitting, not in, but *upon the throne*? Sitting in the Throne are those who have overcome, and who have become Eucharistic, therefore we can now say with certitude, that sitting upon this throne is Christ Jesus, King of All Nations. In chapter 6 we will see a change of ‘occupants’ on the throne, as Christ Jesus will place Eucharistic man, the Monarch, Petrus Romanus on the throne with the commission to bring all things on earth to fulfilment as is written in this prophetic book. This Eucharistic man has the fulness of God, and in the glory of the Resurrection of Christ Jesus, “for if we have been planted together in the likeness of His death, we shall be also in the likeness of His resurrection” (*Rm 6:5*). This Eucharistic man claims Christ Jesus as his Father, and rightly so, for Jesus is the Father of the world which is come. Therefore all who have the courage of faith to accept Jesus Eucharist, True God, and True Man, will have overcome the disbelief and persecutions of those who follow the unbelieving and blaspheming majority. For the moment Christ the King sits upon the throne which is ‘set’ in heaven, that is in The Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church. The jasper stone represents God’s holiness, as it is written: “You shall be holy, for I am holy” (*Lv 11:46*), and the sardine stone represents His justice.

“And round about the throne were four and twenty seats, and upon the seats, four and twenty ancients sitting, clothed in white garments, and on their heads were crowns of gold” (4:4).

Who are these ancients? These are the princes of the temple, and the princes of God, who were established by King David when he appointed to the sons in the lineage of Aaron, duties to be carried out in service of God (*1Chr 24:3-10*). The functions and duties are transferred to the New Testament, when as it says in Saint Luke: “There was in the days of Herod, the king of Judea, a certain priest named Zachary, of the course of Abia...” (*Lk 1:5*). Abia was the eighth priest in the line of functions under David, and here in the Gospel of Saint Luke there is a new beginning (8 is a new beginning), with the announcement that John the Baptist would: “convert many of the children of Israel to the Lord their God. And he

shall go before Him in the spirit and power of Elias: that he may turn the hearts of the fathers unto the children and the incredulous to the wisdom of the just, to prepare unto the Lord a perfect people” (*Lk 1:16,17*). Abia (*Abiah, Abijah*), means the ‘Lord is my Father,’ and so the Archangel Gabriel on behalf of God the Father, announces the transfer from the Old Testament to the New Testament, and also John the Baptist who is the precursor of the Lord Jesus, the Father of the world to come.

We said before that the fulfilment of Judaism is Christianity, and the fulfilment of Christianity is Eucharistedness, so then the duties and responsibilities of the Old and New Testaments are now transferred and fulfilled in the Eucharistic Church, and Eucharistic man insures that not one tittle of the law is left undone, for Jesus said: “Amen I say unto you, till heaven and earth pass, one jot, or one tittle shall not pass of the law, till all be fulfilled” (*Mt 5:18*).

The ‘*white garments*’ of the twenty four ancients are the immaculate victory, and the ‘*crown of gold*’ are elevating Eucharistic man to the highest honor in the goodness and heart of God.

“*And from the throne proceeded lightnings and voices and thunders*” (*4:5*).

These ‘*lightnings, and voices and thunders,*’ are the expressed and foretold power of God Who shall come to render to the world of unbelievers their just reward. Jesus said: “For as lightning comes out of the east and appears even into the west, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be...and then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in Heaven. And then shall all tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of Heaven with much power and majesty” (*Mt 24:27,30*).

These *lightnings* are also the teachings of the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church bringing the enlightenment of the Holy Ghost to all the world, and to all who will listen. The *voices* are the evangelists of the Eternal Gospel who go throughout the whole world in the final effort to get all to convert. The *thunders* are the strong voices of the missionaries in the very last days which shall not be silenced. Among these evangelists will be

“many of those that sleep in the dust of the earth, shall awake, unto life everlasting ...shall shine as the brightness of the firmament, and they that instruct many to justice, as stars for all eternity” (*Dn 12:2,3*).

As we said before, *clouds* are a symbol of impending storm or disaster, so when this moment arrives of seeing ‘the Son of man coming...’, then the hypocrites, and scoffers, and unbelievers, and the synagogue of Satan, will cry out in terror, and unless they convert to Christ Jesus, they will be lost, because the final judgement is at hand.

The account goes on to say: “*And there were seven lamps burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God*” (4:5).

We saw in chapter 1 that these ‘seven spirits’ ‘...which are before His Throne,’ are the seven spirits of ‘Eucharistic man who is endowed with the seven spirits of God, and who lives in the Seven Sacraments of the Church.’ ‘*The lamps,*’ and the ‘*seven spirits*’ are a continuing and everlasting enlightenment to the whole world of all things which God the Creator has in His fathomless, eternal, majestic, and incomprehensible heart of love, which He gives to His children, and here we see those gifts in His Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church. Later on we will see just some of the excellent glory to be revealed to us, and in us.

“*In the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four living creatures, full of eyes before and behind...And the first living creature was like a lion: and the second living creature like a calf: and the third living creature, having the face, as it were, of a man: and the fourth living creature was like an eagle flying*” (4:6^b,7).

The all encompassing nature of the *throne* would indicate that to give a dimension to it would be faulty, as indicated by ‘*in the midst of...and round about.*’ We are speaking about an Omniscient, Omnipotent, and Omnipresent God, and so by definition it is limitless, which is also the authority of the throne of God.

These ‘*living creatures*’ are Eucharistic man, ‘*full of eyes before and behind,*’ that is having the mind of Christ (*1Co 2:16*), with authority over God’s creation. To this Eucharistic man, the New creature, the sons of Jesus, (Who is Himself the Firstborn from the dead), is given the power

and authority to unite in himself the fulness of God's creatures, having in himself, the attributes of fearlessness (*lion*), strength (*calf*), rationality (*man*), and wisdom (*eagle*), in which the species 'man' will no longer kill anything because: "They shall not hurt, nor shall they kill in all My holy mountain..." (*Is 11:9; 65:25*).

In the Government of God there is always order, and so *the four living creatures* also represent the Eternal Virgin Eucharist Church (four is universal - catholic), in it's hierarchical order. The order has the Monarch Petrus Romanus (*lion who rules*), the bishops (*calf who toils for souls, preaching the Gospel and administering temporal and spiritual affairs in his diocese*), the priests and religious (*the man who brings spiritual and temporal needs to his parish*), and all these are represented by contemplation, prayerfulness and enlightenment (*the eagle soaring to new heights*).

Continuing in the understanding we read: "*And the four living creatures had each of them six wings, and round about and within they are full of eyes. And they rested not day and night, saying: Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God Almighty, Who was, and Who is, and Who is to come*"(4:8).

The *six wings* represent man, but not the 'old man' who is no longer, but the glorious new creature, Eucharistic man, sons of God, as it is written: "...you have received the spirit of adoption of sons, whereby we cry: 'Abba (Father)'. For the Spirit Himself gives testimony to our spirit that we are the sons of God, and if sons, heirs also, heirs indeed of God and joint heirs with Christ, yet so, if we suffer with Him, that we may be also glorified with Him. For I reckon that the sufferings of this time are not worthy to be compared with the glory to come that shall be revealed in us" (*Rm 8:15-18*). This glory of bi-location, is even more, it is multi-location, (being in many places at once), represented by *the six wings*.

The new creature, Eucharistic man, son of Christ Jesus, is further glorified by being '*full of eyes*,' that is he knows and sees as God Himself sees. This is only a part of the glory to be revealed in Eucharistic man.

The song of: "*Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God Almighty, Who was, and Who is, and Who is to come,*" is a prophecy yet to be made known to man in

it's fulness, and still to be fulfilled. We in our humanity now know part of the song, 'Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God Almighty, Who was, and Who is,' but we do not at this time know the completion of the revelation of the fulness of 'Who is to come.' We do know in words the 'glory' but yet the glory to come in Eucharistic man is at this moment not revealed, because it is so phenomenal that it cannot be described. It is indescribable. "We see now through a glass in a dark manner but then face to Face" (*1Co 13:12*). Therefore this is sung in the Eternal Virgin Eucharist Church in heaven, not Heaven, before the completion of all things, because in Heaven there is no night (*Apoc 22:5*).

"And when those living creatures gave glory and honour and benediction to Him that sits on the throne, Who lives for ever and ever, the four and twenty ancients fell down before Him that sits on the Throne and adored Him that lives for ever and ever and cast their crowns before the Throne, saying: 'Thou art worthy, O Lord our God, to receive glory, and honour, and power, because Thou have created all things, and for Thy will they were and have been created'" (4:9-11).

The One Who sits **ON** the throne is Christ Jesus. Petrus Romanus (who, under Almighty God, has spiritual and temporal authority over the earth and sometimes he is referred to as the Great Monarch), Eucharistic man sits **IN** the Throne with Jesus (*Apoc 3:21*). Almighty God, Holy Trinity, while being united in Eucharistic man, is still above Eucharistic man, who recognizes, honors, and is eternally grateful, full of respect to He Who created him. Therefore he (Eucharistic man), gives glory, and honor, and power to God, Who in the first place, gave glory, and honor, and power to Eucharistic man!

The four living creatures are the completeness of the original Eucharistic man. Why do I say original? Because it has not been shown at this time what is the total fulness, but one thing we do know: "the charity of Christ, which surpasses all knowledge..." (*Ep 3:19*) is given to us. Therefore this fulness is an expression far beyond the conception and comprehension of the 'old man.'

Chapter 5

The book with the seven seals is opened

“And I saw, in the right hand of Him that sat on the Throne, a book, written within and without, sealed with seven seals” (5:1).

Who is sitting *on the Throne*? Notice here a different preposition ‘on’ not ‘in’ the Throne! We said before that the one sitting ‘in’ the Throne is Eucharistic man, but here the One sitting *‘on’ the Throne* is Almighty God, Holy Trinity. This book written *‘within and without’* signifies that the book is complete, with nothing further to be added or subtracted. It is closed, ‘sealed’ to the understanding of those who disbelieve, and will only be revealed to those who in truth, seek the spiritual perfection of Truth, which only comes with the full practice of the Seven Sacraments.

“And I saw a strong angel, proclaiming with a loud voice: ‘Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?’” (5:2).

This *‘strong angel...with a loud voice,’* is an important Eucharistic man in the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, a prince as in one of the 24 ancients, as we saw in chapter 4. He asks the waiting universe, with the voice of his authority, loud enough for all to hear: ‘Who has the fortitude, and the worthiness, to even consider opening the book, which are so mystically sealed by God?’

“And no man was able, neither in heaven, nor on earth, nor under the earth, to open the book, nor to look on it” (5:3).

The answer is simple, there was no *‘man’* able, not even in *heaven*, never mind earth, to even look upon the book. Because Eucharistic man has accomplished oneness in God, walking in newness of life, in the likeness of the Resurrection of Christ Jesus, and is no longer the ‘old man,’ but a ‘new creature.’

“And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open the book, nor to see it” (5:3,4).

This means that no man could be found to open the book because of the innate knowledge that only ‘the mind of Christ’ could do, and this mind is only in the ‘new man,’ Eucharistic man, Christ Jesus.

“And one of the ancients said to me: ‘Weep not, behold the lion of the tribe of Judah, the root of David, has prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof’ (5:5).

That *ancient* who assured Saint John, is the prince, one of the twenty four ancients which we saw in verse 2, who in fulfilling his priestly role, was able to make such a wonderful proclamation. This Eucharistic man, priest of God, knew, and as Saint John was not yet Eucharisted so he did not have the Divine insight. This *‘lion’* is Petrus Romanus (also known as the Great Monarch), *of the tribe of Judah*, that is of the title of Jesus Christ, Who is of the root of David and is called *‘Lion of the tribe of Judah.’* Because of his faith in Jesus Eucharist, and of the graces he has received from Almighty God, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, he is able to *open the seven seals* to perfection.

“And I saw, and behold in the midst of the Throne, and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the ancients, a Lamb standing, as it were slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God, sent forth into all the earth” (5:6).

‘In the midst of’ fulfills the prophecy in Isaiah: “Rejoice, and praise, O you habitation of Sion, for great is He that is in the midst of you, the Holy One of Israel” (*Is 12:6*). The song of rejoicing will be taken up again in this and in following chapters. *In the midst of* all the glories of heaven (the Eucharistic Church), is Christ Jesus. In the midst of the very Throne, and the ancients, and the living creatures is Petrus Romanus. He is Eucharistic man, and therefore being in Christ Jesus represented *‘a Lamb standing as it were slain.’* When Jesus said at the Last Supper: “This is the Chalice of My Blood (*Lk 22:20*), of the New and Eternal Testament (*1Jn 5:11*), Which shall be shed for you (*Lk 22:20*), and for many (*Mk 14:24*), unto the remission of sins” (*Mt 26:28*). He was saying that His Blood will be shed until sin will be no more, that is until sin (Satan) is defeated and put into hell for ever. There will never again be priests who celebrate Mass in sin (illicit), and never again will there be those who receive Him irreverently. In this verse, *‘as it were slain’* is now completed, and Eucharistic man comes into the fulness of the gifts of the Holy Ghost having *seven horns* (authority) and *seven eyes* (wisdom), which are the seven Spirits of God, sent forth into all the earth.

It is Petrus Romanus who has the Seven Sacraments (*seven horns*), which have been given to him. These Sacraments are being re-emphasized in the Apocalypse, also known as ‘The Revelation of Jesus Christ,’ and could easily be called, ‘The Revelation of the Seven Sacraments.’

“And he came and took the book out of the right hand of Him that sat on the Throne” (5:7).

That is, Petrus Romanus takes the Book from the hand of Christ Jesus, Second Person of the Holy Trinity, Who sits *on the Throne*. The friendship (*right hand*) is extended to the Monarch, who has the authority to ‘take’ the book from Jesus. The Book is not handed to him as a condescending act, but he ‘took’ the book because he has Eucharistic Unity in Christ Jesus!

“And when he had opened the book, the four living creatures, and the four and twenty ancients, fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of saints” (5:8).

No one else but Petrus Romanus has the authority, or the power, to reveal what is about to unfold. It is he and only he who reveals the events to those who believe in Christ Jesus Holy Eucharist. The Eucharistic Church is here seen bowing down and giving homage and blessings, and together with Petrus Romanus they offer *the prayers of all the saints* for this exalted event.

“and they sung a new canticle, saying: ‘Thou art worthy, O Lord, to take the book, and to open the seals thereof, because Thou were slain and have redeemed us to God, in Thy Blood, out of every tribe, and tongue, and people, and nation, and have made us to our God, a Kingdom, and priests, and we shall reign on the earth” (5:9,10).

This canticle is sung to Jesus, Who through His mercy has in unison with His Monarch, allowed the seals to be opened.

Only the Lamb of God through Petrus Romanus *is worthy to open the Book*, to reveal the secrets, and to be honored by all the saints and angels in heaven, from the four corners of the earth, from *every tribe, tongue,*

people, and nation, (the Eucharistic Church which is Heaven on earth where God resides in Eucharistic unity in man): “All the ends of the earth have seen the salvation of our God” (Ps 97:3).

Let us identify the multitudes, and hear what they say to Jesus:

“And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the Throne, and the living creatures, and the ancients, (and the number of them was thousands of thousands), saying with a loud voice: ‘The Lamb that was slain is worthy to receive power, and divinity, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and benediction’” (5:11,12).

The glory of all the citizens of heaven, the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, is acclaimed and given to Jesus, the Glory of the Heaven of heaven, for indeed to Him has been given “all power in Heaven and in earth” (*Mt 28:19*), which He gave to His Monarch, Petrus Romanus.

The full chorus of the Heavenly court join in the song of praise: *“And every creature which is in Heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, I heard all saying: ‘To Him that sits on the Throne, and to the Lamb, benediction, and honour, and glory, and power, for ever and ever’” (5:13).*

Notice here the Mystical Body of Christ giving unified praise:

The Church Triumphant: (*Every creature in Heaven*).

The Church Militant (Eucharistic Church): (*On the earth and sea*).

The Church Suffering: (*Under the earth*).

In this verse we have the same Name as we saw in verse 5:1, ‘...*Him that sits on the Throne, and to the Lamb,*’ therefore the Mystical Body of Christ, bow down in humble adoration to God on His Throne, the Most Holy Trinity, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.

In the mystery of the mysteries of the Holy Rosary, is revealed the ultimate union of man in God, and God in man. Our purpose and goal in this life is revealed therein, so that we “may be filled unto all the fulness of God” (*Ep 3:19*). We see here how the Church Militant comes to Eucharistic oneness in God, and how clearly this prodigy is achieved. If we prayerfully study the ‘mystery’ of the ‘mysteries’ we will be

enlightened on the gift of Jesus Christ, God the Son, Second Person of the Holy Trinity, given to us through His Blessed Ever Virgin Mother, Immaculate Mary, who is by definition of Her delivery of the Son of God, the Mother of God on earth. From the Annunciation to the Coronation, the mystery of man achieving oneness in God the Almighty is revealed!

The First Mystery. The **Annunciation** that Jesus wishes to come and live in us, and invites us to live in Him in Eucharistic unity, in the New Creation, of which He, the Father of the world which is come, is the First Born of all creation in Eucharistic man.

Few accept His offer, and the majority reject Him and cause great **Agony** in the world.

Jesus assures us, His New Creation, Eucharistic man, that we will have a glorious **Resurrection**, as He raises us up from the faithless and perverse generation (*Lk 9:41*). Few people accept. Jesus said: “Enter ye in at the narrow gate, for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leads to destruction, and many there are who go in thereat. How narrow is the gate, and strait is the way that leads to life, and few there are that find it!” (*Mt 7:13,14*).

“If we be dead with Him, we shall live also with Him” (*2T 2:11*). “You are come to mount Sion and to the city of the living God, the Heavenly Jerusalem, and to the company of many thousands of angels, and to the Church of the firstborn who are written in the heavens, and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of the just made perfect, and to Jesus the mediator of the New Testament, and to the sprinkling of blood which speaks better than that of Abel. See that you refuse Him not that speaks. For if they escaped not, who refused Him that spoke upon earth, much more shall not we, that turn away from Him that speaks to us from Heaven” (*Hb 12:22-25*). Jesus prayed to the Father: “I in them, and Thou in Me, that they may be made perfect in one” (*Jn 17:23*). It is written: “Without faith it is impossible to please God” (*Hb:6*).

The Second Mystery. Eucharistic man is sent on **Visitation**, bringing the joyful news to others.

The glad tidings will be welcomed by few, while the majority will scorn the message, and **Scourge** the messenger. Jesus told us: “Beware of men. For they will deliver you up in councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues. And you shall be brought before governors, and before kings for My sake, for a testimony to them and to the Gentiles. But when they shall deliver you up, take no thought how or what to speak, for it shall be given you in that hour what to speak, for it is not you that speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaks in you” (*Mt 10:17-20*).

Jesus assures us that He will **Ascend** us above all worldly persecutions.

The Third Mystery. With the **Birth** of Jesus in us, and we in Him, the New Creation, Eucharistic man sees the allurements of worldly living as a **Crown of Thorns**.

Almighty God sends the Paraclete, the **Holy Ghost**, upon us, to direct and guide us, fulfilling the promise: “I will give My law in their soul, and I will write it in their heart: and I will be their God, and they shall be My people. And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying: Know the Lord: for all shall know Me from the least of them even to the greatest, says the Lord” (*Jr 31:33,34*). “And I will ask the Father, and He shall give you another Paraclete, that He may abide with you for ever, the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it sees Him not, nor knows Him. But you shall know Him, because He shall abide with you and shall be in you. If any one love Me, he will keep My word. And My Father will love him, and we will come to him, and will make our abode with him. But the Paraclete, the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in My Name, He will teach you all things, and bring all things to your mind, whatsoever I shall have said to you” (*Jn 14:16,17,23,26*).

The Fourth Mystery. Our Blessed Mother and Saint Joseph **Present us** in Jesus to our Heavenly Father. Jesus is the first born of the Blessed Ever Virgin Mary, of whom we, Eucharisted man, are the next born.

We **Carry our Cross** with patience, and help others to carry theirs.

God the Father **Assumes** us body and soul into the Kingdom of God on earth, as it is in Heaven. Jesus said: “Come, ye blessed of My Father, possess you the Kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world” (*Mt 25:34*).

The Fifth Mystery. We **Find Jesus in the Temple** of our hearts. “Know you not that you are the Temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you? For the Temple of God is holy, which you are” (*1Co 3:16,17*). “You are the Temple of the living God” (*2Co 6:16*).

We **Crucify** the world and all its allurements in our selves, and we die to the world.

Almighty God gives us a **Crown of Glory**, that is, He gives us His very Self, the Most Holy Trinity, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, living in Oneness in us. “In that day you shall know that I am in My Father, and you in Me, and I in you” (*Jn 14:20*).

For this incomprehensible gift, we the New Creation, Eucharistic man, thank and give praise to Almighty God.

Jesus said to the Father: “I have finished the work which Thou gave Me to do” (*Jn 17:4*), and so in the victory of Eucharist man, the work is finished!

“And the four living creatures said: “Amen.” And the four and twenty ancients fell down on their faces and adored Him that lives for ever and ever” (5:14).

‘Him that lives for ever and ever,’ is our Creator. Amen! So be it! It is true. It is a fact.

Chapter 6

The first six seals are opened

What follows from here until chapter 18, is a description of the seven seals and their effects, and seven trumpets which the seventh seal produces, and three woes produced by the fourth trumpet, and finally the seven angels having the seven last plagues (with another seven angels in Chapter 14 who set the stage for the final battle).

This would be outlined as follows:

1st Seal: 6:1 - The white horse and rider with bow for conquering.

2nd Seal: 6:3 - The red horse for war.

3rd Seal: 6:5 - The black horse for famine.

4th Seal: 6:7 - The pale horse death, plagues, and famine.

5th Seal: 6:9 - The souls of the martyrs.

6th Seal: 6:12 - The great earthquake.

7th Seal: 8:1 - The silence in Heaven.

The 7th Seal brings in the Seven Trumpets:

1st Trumpet: 8:7; hail and fire, mingled with blood.

2nd Trumpet: 8:8; mountain of fire cast into the sea.

3rd Trumpet: 8:10; great star Wormwood fell from heaven.

4th Trumpet: 8:12; third part of sun, moon, stars, smitten.

And the 4th Trumpet also introduces 3 Woes.

5th Trumpet: 1st Woe: Evil spirits let loose. 9:1-12

6th Trumpet: 2nd Woe: fire, smoke, brimstone. 9:13-11:14

7th Trumpet: 3rd Woe: Satan cast onto earth. 11:15-12:12

The 7th Trumpet brings in the 7 plagues.

1st Plague: 16:2 a sore and grievous wound.

2nd Plague: 16:3 vial of blood upon the sea.

3rd Plague: 16:4 vial of blood on rivers and fountains.

4th Plague: 16:8 vial of heat and fire upon the sun.

5th Plague: 16:10 vial of darkness on seat of the beast.

6th Plague: 16:12 release of unclean spirits like frogs.

7th Plague: 16:17 the great earthquake and hailstone.

There are two other different set of angels at work and we will deal with

them in Chapters 7, and 14.

A very subtle change has taken place which I alluded to in (4:2,3). It is now Petrus Romanus sitting on the throne. Allow me to explain using the example of Simon Peter:

“And it came to pass, that when the multitudes pressed upon Him to hear the word of God, He stood by the lake of Genesareth, and saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them and were washing their nets. And going into one of the ships **that was Simon’s**, He desired him to draw back a little from the land. **And sitting**, He taught the multitudes out of the ship. Now when He had ceased to speak, He said to Simon: **Launch out** into the deep and let down your nets for a draught. And Simon answering said to Him: Master, we have laboured all the night and have taken nothing: but at Thy word I will let down the net. And when they had done this, they enclosed a **very great multitude** of fishes, and their net broke” (*Lk 5:1-6*).

The point here is that after He sat in the Chair of Peter, and gave the teaching He told His Vicar to launch out! So too, after the teaching from the ‘throne’ He tells His Monarch to launch out.

“And I saw that the Lamb had opened one of the seven seals, and I heard one of the four living creatures, as it were the voice of thunder, saying: ‘Come and see’” (6:1).

In the previous chapter 5:5 we saw that one of the twenty four ancients made the declaration in the Throne-room that ‘the Lion of the Tribe of Judah, has prevailed to open the book and to loose the seven seals thereof,’ and that the ‘Lamb’ was Eucharistic man Petrus Romanus. Now we see *the first* of the four *living creatures*, who is Eucharistic man, inviting the visionary Saint John, to ‘*Come and see.*’ There are two things of note here. First, Eucharistic man encourages all people to ‘Come and see.’ Second, Saint John is not at that time ‘Eucharisted,’ he is still in the confines of his original body, the ‘old man,’ yet here he is ‘in the spirit,’ a gift for the purpose of the revelation being given to him.

We will now see the four horsemen of the Apocalypse, who bring killing, torture, famine, and death. They are of the Devil, they are not of God, but

are allowed by God for the testing of our faith. “Let no man, when he is tempted, say that he is tempted by God. For God is not a tempter of evils, and He tempts no man” (*Jm 1:13*).

“*And I saw, and behold a white horse, and he that sat on him had a bow, and there was a crown given him, and he went forth conquering that he might conquer*” (*6:2*).

Some interpreters suggests that it is Jesus, going forth to subdue the world by His gospel. This is not correct as we shall see in verse 10 the souls of the martyrs being told by Jesus to: “rest for a little time...” Unlike the above *white horse*, we will see later another white horse, coming from Heaven with different weapons of warfare. “And I saw Heaven opened, and behold a white horse, and he that sat upon him was called faithful, and true, and with justice does he judge, and fight” (*Apoc 19:11*). Remember that it is recorded: “Not with an army, nor by might, but by My spirit, says the Lord of hosts” (*Zc 4:6*). Therefore the rider here in verse 6:2 is the Antichrist (who is a Zionist Jew), going with his crooked designs (*bow*), to kill and conquer souls, and to deprive God of His creatures, and fill Hell with Satan’s revenge.

We saw on 5:7 that Jesus Christ our Lord and God had brought His Monarch, Petrus Romanus, Eucharistic man, into oneness with Him, and so Eucharistic man ‘took’ the book from the hand of Friendship of Jesus. Here in 6:2 the Devil does not have friendship or oneness with Antichrist, but ‘gives’ the *crown* to his inferior.

The *crown* given him from the devil represents control of the political, economic, and ecclesiastical systems which faithless man enacts into ‘law’ for all governments, financial institutions, and ‘churches’ of the world to enforce, or else be punished by the four horsemen who follow.

The *bow* suggests specific and limited targets, which are heretics, Zionists/Masons/Communists including Muslims who still have ‘no king but Caesar,’ and all who oppose the Kingship of Christ. These controls are the tools, the ‘*crown*’ given to the Antichrist and the False Prophet which we will deal fully with in chapter 13.

“And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second living creature saying: ‘Come and see.’ And there went out another horse that was red. And to him that sat thereon, it was given that he should take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another. And a great sword was given to him.” (6:3,4).

To the *second* of the four living creatures, Eucharistic man says: ‘*Come and see*’ and this tells us that we have to make some effort to understand the visions. We must leave our position of comfort and move, see, open our eyes, and ears, and our hearts to ‘*Come and see.*’

Do not forget that Saint John is being shown the things which are taking place. We will see a little later “that great dragon was cast out (*of heaven*), that old serpent, who is called the Devil and Satan, who seduces the whole world. And he was cast unto the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him...Woe to the earth, and to the sea, because the Devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, knowing that he has but a short time” (*Apoc 12:9,12*). Therefore it is the Devil through Antichrist and the False Prophet and their minions *who takes peace from the earth and causes people to kill one another*. God allows it, for He says in another place: “The ten horns which you saw in the beast, these shall hate the harlot and shall make her desolate and naked and shall eat her flesh and shall burn her with fire. For God has given into their hearts to do that which pleases Him, that they give their kingdom to the beast, till the words of God be fulfilled” (*Apoc 17:16,17*). *The red horse* is the actions of the Antichrist, which God allows, so that the people of faith will stand firm as did their ancestors, who suffered martyrdom for the Word of God.

“And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third living creature saying: ‘Come and see.’ And behold a black horse. And he that sat on him had a pair of scales in his hand. And I heard, as it were a voice in the midst of the four living creatures, saying: ‘Two pounds of wheat for a penny, and thrice two pounds of barley for a penny, and see you hurt not the wine and the oil’” (6:5,6).

The argument is made that this *black horse* is God’s punishment for unbelievers on the earth, but such an argument is not consistent with the actions of God.

Again God allows the famine, and the third living creature, Eucharistic man, announces to the world the selfishness and greed of the corporate worldly man, who inflicts famine on the poor, by charging them *'two pounds of wheat for a penny,'* meaning a day's wages for a loaf of bread, but corporate man says, *'hurt not the wine and the oil,'* which means, do not charge me income taxes, or interfere with my luxuries. Saint James confirms this: "Go to now, ye rich men, weep and howl in your miseries, which shall come upon you. Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth eaten. Your gold and silver is cankered, and the rust of them shall be for a testimony against you, and shall eat your flesh like fire. You have stored up to yourselves wrath against the last days. Behold the hire of the labourers who have reaped down your fields, which by fraud has been kept back by you, cries, and the cry of them has entered into the ears of the Lord of Sabaoth. You have feasted upon earth, and in riotousness you have nourished your hearts, in the day of slaughter. You have condemned and put to death the Just One, and He resisted you not" (*Jm 5:1-6*). When there is no food, gold will buy nothing!

The converts to Jesus show their fortitude in being willing to resist evil - *even unto death*. The evil political and false prophetic ecclesiastical legislation empowers the *'black horse'* to cause famine and misery.

"And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth living creature saying: 'Come and see.' And behold a pale horse, and he that sat upon him, his name was Death, and Hell followed him. And power was given to him over the four parts of the earth, to kill with sword, with famine, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth" (6:7,8).

The *fourth living creature*, Eucharistic man says; *"Come and see."* We are introduced to the fourth horseman who is of course from the Devil (*Death*). We saw in chapter 3 that Jesus said: "Because you have kept the word of My patience, I will also keep you from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon the whole world to try them that dwell upon the earth" (*Apoc 3:10*). Well here is the threat fulfilled. God allows the people to be tested, will they follow God in trials, or will they follow the Devil, who here is called death? (*Gn 2:17*). Those who die the death of Satan go to Hell, and so Hell, like a great dragnet, follows *'death'* here in

this account, to catch the fallen souls.

The political UN (under absolute Zionist/Masonic control), with its power over money, armies, law, as well as the ecclesiastical pronouncements allow *'death'* to the soul to be enforced.

The *'beasts of the earth'* are the Zionist/Masonic/Communist politicians who control all the governments of the world including their armies and financial institutions. Included in this group are the Muslim terrorists who are financed by the Islamic states oil producing *'petro dollars.'* We will deal with these in Chapt. 13.

"And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God and for the testimony which they held. And they cried with a loud voice, saying: 'How long, O Lord (Holy and True), do Thou not judge and revenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?' And white robes were given to every one of them one, and it was said to them that they should rest for a little time till their fellow servants and their brethren, who are to be slain even as they, should be filled up" (6:9-11).

'Under the altar' are the martyrs of the Holy Catholic and Eucharistic Church who held fast to the Seven Sacraments of the Church, and defended Holy Eucharist, dating from the time of Saint Stephen, the first martyr, until the time of the marching forth of the armies that are in Heaven.

'To rest a little' is until the end of the final persecution of Eucharistic man, which we will see in Chapter (14:18-20).

'The white robe' is a sign of victory, and priestly anointing, *'Eucharistedness,'* which is given to these martyrs, who will soon be joined by others who overcome the devilish attacks of the aforementioned four horsemen. This is a great comfort to those on the earth knowing that the prayers of the martyrs surrounds them and encourages them as they receive the plenitude of God's graces. It also deals with those who will be martyred in the final part of the Great Tribulation, and this we will deal with in 12:17.

The reason for the robe '*given to every one of them one*' that this victory is final. One immaculate robe is sufficient, since evil and sin and death are totally defeated, so immaculacy is forever in Heaven.

"And I saw, when he had opened the sixth seal, and behold there was a great earthquake. And the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the whole moon became as blood" (6:12),

From here to the end of this chapter we will see seven major events at the opening of *the sixth seal*, by the Monarch, Petrus Romanus, Eucharistic man. This sixth seal is spiritually the seal of fallen man, the seal of iniquity. The great earthquake is spiritual upheavals and blasphemies in the Church which was left to us by Jesus Christ. These are the rejection of the doctrines and teachings of the Gospel and of the Bible in general. The Zionist/Masonic/Communist and Muslim forces of evil would seem to think that they have conquered the world.

There was a very significant event which happened in 1884 when the then Pope Leo XIII, after he had celebrated Mass and was at the foot of the Altar, had a vision of Satan shaking his fist at Jesus and stating that given 100 years that he would conquer the world. Pope Leo was so shaken by this vision that he immediately went to his office and wrote the Exorcism Prayer, also known as 'The Saint Michael Prayer,' as follows:

"Saint Michael the Archangel, defend us in battle.

Be our protection against the wickedness and the snares of the devil.

May God rebuke him, we humbly pray,

and do thou O Prince of the Heavenly Host, by the power of God,
cast down into Hell,

Satan and all his evil spirits who wander throughout the world,
seeking the ruin of souls. Amen."

It is my speculative opinion that the 100 years began when the demonic forces of Lenin, Trotsky and Stalin, held their Comintern International Congress on 2-6 March 1919 with the objective and plans to promote their errors and evil demonic society throughout the world. Our Blessed Mother, Mary, Ever Virgin, Mother of Our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ proclaimed to three children at Fatima, Portugal in 1917, that if Russia were not consecrated to Her Immaculate Heart, that Russia would spread

its errors throughout the world. The diabolical results of Communism speaks for itself.

The *great earthquake* will be seen later on, but now let it suffice to say that it is 10 X 10 X 10. That is, there will be ten quakes, measuring ten on the Richer Scale, happening in ten different locations of the world, simultaneously. I assure you this event will get everyone's attention, and will certainly loose loins.

The *sun* becoming as '*black as sackcloth of hair*' is the authority of the Church being greatly diminished through error, heresies, and scandals. This has happened as we in the 21st Century are very much aware. Spiritually the *sun* is the Church, the *moon* is the governments, and the *stars* are the rulers.

The '*whole moon became as blood*' would signify the disobedience to God's law, and the teaching of Jesus, and the traditions handed down from the first apostles, and through the early Church Councils. All have been changed and watered down to suit the 'rights of modern man,' including the priests and hierarchy who do not want to have any authority over them.

"and the stars from heaven fell upon the earth, as the fig tree casts its green figs when it is shaken by a great wind" (6:13).

These *stars* are specifically the hierarchy who are today preaching and practicing 'Ecumenism.' A *great wind* is heresy and ecumenism sponsored by the man called 'Francis.' Was Jesus 'ecumenical' and 'politically correct' when He called the Jews 'hypocrites, whited sepulchers, den of thieves, brood of vipers'? I think not!

"and the heaven departed as a book folded up, and every mountain, and the islands, were moved out of their places" (6:14).

Here we see the original True Church (*heaven*) being cast out of many places through splinter groups such as Copts, Orthodox, Protestant, and post Vatican II Roman Catholic churches. The '*book folded up*' is the truth which they denied, and the desecration of the Seven Sacraments. The *mountains and islands* are the bishoprics and delegated areas given

to the hierarchy, and are moved out of their places. In addition to all of this there is a very great physical earthquake.

“And the kings of the earth, and the princes, and tribunes, and the rich, and the strong, and every bondman, and every freeman, hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of mountains, and they say to the mountains and the rocks: ‘Fall upon us and hide us from the face of him that sits upon the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb, for the great day of their wrath is come, and who shall be able to stand?’” (6:15-17).

The spiritual events mentioned from verses 12 to 14, here become physical events for now it is God’s turn! Now God (*Him that sits upon the Throne as we saw in 4:2*) lets forth His fury. He has foretold it, and now here it is in full blast.

All the riches, and nuclear weapons, and boasting by the vile politicians, all the Zionists, atheists, communists, Masonic dictators, terrorists both ‘legal’ and ‘illegal,’ are called to an accounting of their actions, who stole power from God’s children.

The supposed leaders and heroes are seen for what they are - cowards *‘hiding in the dens and in the rocks of mountains.’* Now is the reckoning for them.

Chapter 7

The 144,000 are sealed in their foreheads

Here we come to another ‘set of angels,’ four of them having power over the element of winds, and the fifth one having authority over the above four angel warriors. (These angels are different from the seven angels of the seven churches).

“After these things, I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that they should not blow upon the earth, nor upon the sea, nor on any tree” (7:1).

Before looking at the physical, let us first examine the spiritual aspects of the ‘earth,’ ‘sea,’ and ‘trees.’ The ‘*earth*’ is materialism and those who look to ‘things’ as their strength. The ‘*sea*’ is the population of all nations who see their strength in their superior numbers. The ‘*trees*’ are the rulers and petty officials who see their strength in the armies and legal declarations and financial systems, but in particular the United Nations Assembly.

These *four angels* were foreseen in Zachariah: “I saw by night, and behold a man riding upon a red horse, and he stood among the myrtle trees that were in the bottom, and behind him were horses, red, speckled, and white. And I said: ‘What are these, my lord?’ and the angel that spoke in me, said to me: ‘I will show thee what these are,’ and the man that stood among the myrtle trees answered, and said: ‘These are they, whom the Lord has sent to walk through the earth.’ And they answered the angel of the Lord, that stood among the myrtle trees, and said: ‘We have walked through the earth, and behold all the earth is inhabited, and is at rest.’ And the angel that spoke in me, said to me: ‘Cry you, saying: Thus saith the Lord of hosts: I am zealous for Jerusalem, and Sion with a great zeal. And I am angry with a great anger with the wealthy nations, for I was angry a little, but they helped forward the evil’” (Zc 1:8-15).

The ‘*four winds*’ are the spirit of God the Holy Ghost which is given in it’s completeness (four) to execute God’s judgement. The ‘*four winds*’ in spiritual understanding are prophets, and here the four are shown with a

universal message to the whole world. They are not to let go, or cause any evil thing to happen (such as releasing the four horsemen), until God brings His faithful, that is, those who will yet convert and come into the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, bringing them under His protection.

“And I saw another angel ascending from the rising of the sun, having the sign of the living God. And he cried with a loud voice to the four angels to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea, saying: ‘Hurt not the earth, nor the sea, nor the trees, till we sign the servants of our God in their foreheads.’” (7:2,3).

This angel ascending from *‘the rising of the sun’* signifies a new day in the history of the world. Later we will see: “That time is no longer” 10:6, and that the treacherous Antichrist and False Prophet were told that “they shall not prosper: because as yet the end is unto another time” (*Dn 11:27*), and so this new day has come for them. *‘A loud voice’* is the voice of authority over the whole earth.

Dealing first with being signed *‘in’* their foreheads means that they have the Name of Jesus Christ, True God, in their belief and understanding, this is their freewill acceptance of Christ the King. This is opposed to *‘on’* their foreheads which the reign of Antichrist will force people to be *‘tattooed’* with the mark of the beast. To be implanted with a micro-chip at infancy on the head or hand, is not an act of defiance against God, but is an egregious act imposed on them by the antichrists, Zionism, Freemasonry, Communism and Islam.

God protects His people, before He allows the Great Tribulation to begin, which we will see in the next chapter with the first trumpet. The command - *‘Hurt not,’* means that the evil rulers are rendered powerless until God, through the Great Monarch, gives them permission to act. Having the *‘sign’* of the Living God is Eucharistic man, who has the authority and power to execute God’s commands.

A typical example of God’s protection in a place of refuge was seen on the 6th of August 1945 in Hiroshima, Japan. The atomic bomb was dropped only eight short blocks from a house where a German Jesuit priest called Father Hubert Shiffner and seven of his colleagues stayed.

Although disaster and lethal destruction raged around them, they escaped without any harm from either radiation or blast. Since that time those eight survivors have been examined by over two hundred scientists to try to understand how they could have escaped unharmed. Speaking on USA television, Father Shiffner gave the startling answer, “In that house the Rosary was prayed every day. In that house we lived the message of Fatima.” A Franciscan monastery founded by Saint Maximilian Kolbe escaped similar harm three days later in Nagasaki, when the second atomic bomb was dropped. There was destruction all around, yet the secure refuge remained intact. By the mighty hand of God, the faithful were protected in the fiery furnace (*Dn 3:24*).

“And I heard the number of them that were signed. An hundred forty-four thousand were signed, of every tribe of the children of Israel” (7:4).

This 144,000 are different from those mentioned later in chapter 14. The signing of 144,000 has received many and various interpretations. Some say it is the final conversion of the Jews to Christ, fulfilling what Saint Paul said: “For I would not have you ignorant, brethren, of this mystery (lest you should be wise in your own conceits) that blindness in part has happened in Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles should come in, and so all Israel should be saved” (*Rm 11:25,26*). That is all Israel who want to be saved, who are the present day Israelites and are waiting for the coming of the Messiah. These Israelites are not the political Israelis who want to set up the kingdom of Zion to oppose the Kingdom of God, who are Antichrists and Zionists and are opposed to all that is called God - the greater majority of these Israelis will go to hell with Satan, Antichrist and the False Prophet.

The understanding of the 144,000 is: $12 \times 12 \times 1,000 = 144,000$.

This means:

“12”, which stands for maturity, completion, and Government of God.

“12” from every tribe on earth, represented by the 12 tribes of Israel.

“1,000” a great number from every nation of the world.

The 144,000 is the specific number who believe and stand firm in the Word of God. They do not waver. These have entered in by the narrow gate as stated earlier. Before and during the Great Tribulation, these will bring the truth to a world in turmoil, and which has been led astray by the

ecumenical and the compromising false prophets of the world. The 144,000 will go on to propagate and multiply, thus bringing in the 'great multitude' in verse 9.

I believe that the number of those to be saved include all the people who at the very last moment will turn to Jesus, and so the Israel spoken of here is not only the limited number of the twelve tribes, but also various nations of 'Gentiles' who become the 'people of God,' which is the true meaning of the word 'Israel.' The number sealed here is great, without giving a specific number. If asked, Jesus will even come to the greatest sinner on his cross, in his tribulation, on his deathbed, in his dying breath, to save him.

"Twelve thousand were signed of the tribes of: Judah; Ruben; Gad; Asher; Nephthali; Manasses; Simeon; Levi; Issachar; Zabulon; Joseph; and Benjamin" (7:5-8).

The tribe of Dan is missing as his father prophesied of him: "Let Dan be a snake in the way, a serpent in the path, that bites the horse's heels, that his rider may fall backward" (*Gn 49:17*). Dan is replaced by the son of Joseph whose name is Manasses, which means 'oblivion,' or 'forgetting' (*Gn 41:51*). The meaning here is that those who like Dan, have joined Satan (*serpent*), have denied the Seven Sacraments, and so have excommunicated themselves from the Body of Christ. It is therefore that the Antichrist and the False Prophet are Jewish Zionists who are the snakes of Satan, as we shall see in Chapter 13.

The first apostles and converts were Jews: "In the churches bless ye God the Lord, from the fountains of Israel. There is Benjamin a youth, in ecstasy of mind. The princes of Juda are their leaders: the princes of Zabulon, the princes of Nephthali" (*Ps 67:27,28*). St. Paul was of the tribe of Benjamin, and he wrote his letter to the Hebrews: "For God is not unjust, that He should forget your work and the love which you have shown in His Name, you who have ministered and do minister to the saints" (*Hb 6:10*). There were many who believed including priests and rabbis: "And the word of the Lord increased: and the number of the disciples was multiplied in Jerusalem exceedingly. A great multitude also of the priests obeyed the faith" (*Ac 6:7*). By the princes of Juda, Zabulon,

and Nephthali, we may understand the other apostles, who were of the tribe of Juda; or of the tribes of Zabulon, and Nephthali, where our Lord began to preach, and called His first apostles (*Mt 4:13-16*). During the Roman persecution of Palestine, these Jews who had converted to Christianity, went throughout the world and preached the Good News of the Gospel wherever they went. This then is the signing of the ‘twelve tribes.’ So in truth, the first Christians were converts from Judaism, and why not, Jesus was a Jew, and His earthly parents were of the tribe of Aaron; “And Jacob begot Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ. So all the generations from Abraham to David, are fourteen generations. And from David to the transmigration of Babylon, are fourteen generations: and from the transmigration of Babylon to Christ are fourteen generations” (*Mt 1:16,17*). Since Joseph and Mary were near kinsmen, the pedigree of the one shows that of the other.

“After this, I saw a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations and tribes and peoples and tongues, standing before the Throne and in sight of the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands, and they cried with a loud voice, saying: ‘Salvation to our God, Who sits upon the Throne, and to the Lamb.’ And all the angels stood round about the Throne and the ancients, and the four living creatures, and they fell down before the Throne upon their faces, and adored God, saying: ‘Amen. Benediction, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, honour, and power, and strength, to our God, for ever and ever. Amen” (7:9-12).

Notice here this sevenfold (*spiritual perfection*) canticle of praise which is sung by Eucharistic man, with palms in their hands, that is, all in Eucharistic union with God, the angels, ancients, and all the living creatures, singing in unison, paying homage to God for His ‘*Benediction*¹, *glory*², *wisdom*³, *thanksgiving*⁴, *honour*⁵, *and power*⁶, *and strength*⁷.’ All glory is given to God for His mercy and love, and kindness, and redemption, and salvation, by angels and saints, who are now one in the new creation, Eucharistic man, Christ Jesus, the fulness of the Mystical Body of Christ (*Ep 4:13*).

“And one of the ancients answered and said to me: ‘These that are

clothed in white robes, who are they? And whence came they?’ And I said to him: ‘My lord, you know’” (7:13,14a).

There is another mystery being unfolded here. The Mystical Body of Christ (*here revealed in one of the twenty four ancients*) know some of the happenings going on, and are willing to reach out and teach those who want to learn, and who ask for the assistance (*prayers*) of the angels and saints in Heaven, (*the Church Triumphant*).

“And he said to me: ‘These are they who are come out of great tribulation and have washed their robes, and have made them white in the Blood of the Lamb. Therefore, they are before the Throne of God, and they serve Him day and night in His temple, and He that sits on the Throne shall dwell over them. They shall no more hunger nor thirst, neither shall the sun fall on them, nor any heat. For the Lamb, Which is in the midst of the Throne, shall rule them and shall lead them to the fountains of the Waters of Life, and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes’” (7:14b-17).

We said before in 7:4 that before and during the Great Tribulation, members of the 144,000 would bring the truth to a tumultuous world led astray by the ecumenism and false prophets, and this 144,000 will propagate and multiply bringing in the ‘great multitude’ to the faith of Jesus Eucharist. Now their work is identified by the hierarchal priests of the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church. This is the glory reserved for all who come into Eucharistic oneness in Jesus. These are they who have arrived at the fulness in God. These are the victorious who have arrived through all kinds of trials, tribulations, labors, and toil. They have overcome. They are Eucharistic man, victorious in Jesus over sin and death.

White robes is the state of the soul, and as previously stated, victory in Christ, victory (*palms*) in the Body of Christ.

Chapter 8

The seventh seal opened. The seven trumpets

“And when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven, as it were for half an hour, and I saw seven angels standing in the presence of God, and there were given to them seven trumpets” (8:1,2). What was this *silence*? It was shock at what was about to be revealed. This *silence* was what we would call shocked awe. In a moment, all in heaven saw what was about to unfold. In their ‘*silence*’ they entered into the Heart of the Father, spiritually bringing all the faithful on earth with them.

Immediately there was intercessory prayer for all the faithful on earth. *“And another angel came and stood before the altar, having a golden censer, and there was given to him much incense, that he should offer of the prayers of all saints, upon the Golden Altar which is before the Throne of God” (8:3).*

Understand first the layout in *heaven*. It is in essence the same plan which Moses was given on the Holy Mount (*Ex 25:40*). There was made the Tabernacle of Testimony which was divided into two parts, West, called the Holy of Holies; and East, called the Holy Place. In the Holies of Holy was set the Ark of the Covenant, and there was the veil on the east side, separating it from the Holy Place. Outside the veil, in the Holy Place, was the Table for the loaves of proposition, at the north side. Also the Candlestick on the south side: “He set also the Altar of Gold under the roof of the Testimony, over against the veil, and burnt upon it the incense of spices, as the Lord had commanded Moses” (*Ex 40:19-25*). The entrance to the Tabernacle of Testimony was from the East. In spiritual terms, east means birth, and west means maturity or fulness, and here the fulness means Eucharistic man. The Golden Altar is God’s establishment and acknowledgement of The Eternal Virgin Eucharist Church, which in the Tabernacle of the Testimony was placed before the Holy of Holies. When the prayers are offered on the Golden Altar by the Priest of God, then those prayers have come to fulness before God Himself. That is, the prayers of the saints have reached the very ears of Almighty God, and are accepted by Him, because He is in Eucharistic man and Eucharistic man

is in Him. No prayer by anyone on earth is ever left unheard, and more than that, the prayers are offered in the entire Mystical Body of Christ, and so are received in the Heart of the Father.

“And the smoke of the incense of the prayers of the saints ascended up before God from the hand of the angel” (8:4).

The priest, Eucharistic man who filled the censer with *incense*, stood before the Throne of God offering the *prayers of the saints* on earth, and these *ascended up* to God, that is, the prayers ascended into the very Throne Room of God.

“And the angel took the censer and filled it with the fire of the altar and cast it on the earth, and there were thunders, and voices, and lightnings, and a great earthquake” (8:5).

The prayers and petitions are answered, and now God chastises those who attempt to hurt His people. *Voices* of correction. *Lightnings* of chastisements. Great awakenings, and warnings (*earthquakes*), are given to the errors taught by those rulers on earth who are in authority.

The Church Militant on earth know that this is now ‘the end of time.’ The spirit of God’s people is alerted and inspired to pray. Their prayers and petitions are joined with the prayers of the angels and saints in Heaven, Church Triumphant, with the suffering souls in Purgatory, Church Suffering, all united in the Mystical Body of Christ. Now the prayer is for the gift of fortitude to stand firm in the coming great tribulation. Jesus had said: “For there shall be then great tribulation, such as has not been from the beginning of the world until now, neither shall be” (*Mt 24:21*).

Remember what was said at the beginning with reference to the moment when Eucharistic man was born. We said that at the Resurrection, Jesus Christ became Christ Jesus, that is, His Divinity took pre-eminence over His humanity. It is in our becoming one in Christ, and He becoming one in us, that we are translated into the new man, Eucharistic man. There is only one way that this can be accomplished, and one way only, we must believe, live, and fulfill the Seven Sacraments of the Church, no exceptions and no short-cuts.

As we eat the Spiritual Food of Jesus Eucharist, we gradually become His nature. As the bread and wine are transformed into the Body and Blood of Christ at the Consecration of the Mass, so too, we who partake worthily of His Food, are transformed more and more into His image and likeness, reciprocity taking place, He receives our humanity, we receive His Divinity (2P 1:1-4). This is the great gift for which we work, and so enjoy the surpassing glory of God. Therefore the prayers of all saints ‘ascend up,’ before God from *the hand of the angel*, that is, from His priest, Eucharistic man, who is the minister to God’s people on earth. The *incense* is a sweet aroma, which is the conversion of many to Christ, and ultimately to Eucharistic union in Him.

The Revelation of Jesus Christ is about Eucharistic man coming into the glory of God’s grace, while evil man, those who deny any part of the Seven Sacraments, descend into the devil’s dis-grace.

“And the seven angels who had the seven trumpets prepared themselves to sound the trumpet” (8:6).

The *seven trumpets* sets us on the road to better understanding of the events to take place in our lives, which I believe, will be completed in my lifetime. (I am 83 years old as at this revision made in 2019).

The *trumpet* heralds victory and also destruction. Victory for God’s people, Eucharistic man and those who will enter into Eucharistedness; and destruction for the enemies of God, those who deny Jesus Eucharist. Here it is symbolic of the Battle of Jericho, and the triumphant march of the Israelites, and the fear and defeat of the heathens: “And Joshua rising before day, the priests took the Ark of the Lord, and seven of them seven trumpets, which are used in the jubilee: and they went before the Ark of the Lord, walking and sounding the trumpets: and the armed men went before them, and the rest of the common people followed the Ark, and they blew the trumpets. And they went round about the city the second day once, and returned into the camp. So they did six days. But the seventh day, rising up early, they went about the city, as it was ordered, seven times. And when in the seventh going about the priests sounded with the trumpets, Joshua said to all Israel: Shout: for the Lord has delivered the city to you: and let this city be an anathema, and all things

that are in it, to the Lord. Let only Rahab, the harlot, live, with all that are with her in the house, for she hid the messengers whom we sent. But beware ye lest you touch ought of those things that are forbidden, and you be guilty of transgression, and all the camp of Israel be under sin, and be troubled, but whatsoever gold or silver there shall be, or vessels of brass and iron, let it be consecrated to the Lord, laid up in His treasures. So all the people making a shout, and the trumpets sounding, when the voice and the sound thundered in the ears of the multitude, the walls forthwith fell down: and every man went up by the place that was over against him: and they took the city, and killed all that were in it, man and woman, young and old. The oxen also, and the sheep, and the asses, they slew with the edge of the sword” (*Jos 6:12-21*).

The Church prepares in prayerful silence, conversing with God (*half hour*). Why would they have to prepare themselves? The answer is twofold:

1. They prepare themselves for the final battle of the ages, sending destruction upon the earth, as they engage in mortal combat with Satan and his fallen angels.
2. They restore the earth and the fulness thereof to the beauty God intended.

Here is the previous outline of the first of the Seven Trumpets:

1st Trumpet: 8:7; hail and fire, mingled with blood.

2nd Trumpet: 8:8; mountain of fire cast into the sea.

3rd Trumpet: 8:10; great star Wormwood fell from heaven.

4th Trumpet: 8:12; third part of sun, moon, stars, smitten. 3 Woes.

We begin with a reminder of what Saint Peter wrote about thirty years before Saint John received the Apocalypse: “The day of the Lord shall come as a thief, in which the heavens shall pass away with great violence, and the elements shall be melted with heat, and the earth and the works which are in it, shall be burnt up” (*2P 3:10*). With this brief stark reminder let us understand the trumpets.

“And the first angel sounded the trumpet, and there followed hail and fire, mingled with blood, and it was cast on the earth. And the third part

of the earth was burnt up, and the third part of the trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up” (8:7).

The *'hail and fire'* is symbolic of warfare and now in the 21st Century it signifies guerilla warfare being opposed with conventional warfare of sovereign countries, (each calling the other 'terrorists'). The blood is the destruction to human life and property caused by these wars.

Remember in the previous chapter that God protects His people before He would allow the great tribulation to begin, and so it was commanded: *'Hurt not the earth, nor the sea, nor the trees, till we sign the servants of our God in their foreheads.'*

We said before that the *'earth'* is materialism and those who look to 'things' as their strength; the *'sea'* is the population of all nations who see their strength in their superior numbers, and the *'trees'* are the rulers and petty officials who see their strength in the armies and legal declarations and financial systems, but in particular the United Nations Assembly. To try to put a geographical definition to *'the third part of the earth'* would be futile, but look instead at a map of the world and flag all the 'flashpoints' where these encounters are taking place. See the governments that have been overturned and replaced by guerillas. These wars have left a great area of land devastated, and in some countries, land-mines by the departing armies have not been removed, causing much *'green grass'* (that is innocents) to die or become horribly maimed.

God's people are sealed, and now the ungodly men are in for great tribulation. The earth and vegetation became unproductive (*burnt up*), but it is also a warning that we must not allow our souls to become unproductive like the fig tree (*Mt 21:19*) and burnt up by abandoning the Seven Sacraments.

“And the second angel sounded the trumpet: and, as it were, a great mountain, burning with fire, was cast into the sea. And the third part of the sea became blood. And the third part of those creatures died which had life in the sea, and the third part of the ships were destroyed” (8:8,9).

This *'great mountain'* is Islam, promoted by the false prophet

Mohammed. He came from the Arabian mountains of Mecca and Medina, now Saudi Arabia, and with great cruelty, vengeance and much bloodshed, conquered the surrounding countries of the Mediterranean, like Egypt, Lybia, Tunisia, etc., which ‘revolted’ in 2011 and brought them into submission to his diabolical ‘religion.’ All services of transport are disrupted, major supplies of food and energy are destroyed, and there are a few who will see God’s hand and return to Him seeking forgiveness for their unruly life.

This great mountain of fire is also the Holy Ghost Who at the same time shakes men out of their doldrums, and alerts them (*earth*) to examine and see their fall, and return to Jesus Christ, King of All Nations.

The next trumpet sounds immediately:

“And the third angel sounded the trumpet: and a great star fell from heaven, burning as it were a torch. And it fell on the third part of the rivers and upon the fountains of waters, and the name of the star is called Wormwood. And the third part of the waters became wormwood. And many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter” (8:10,11).

The *great star falling from heaven* is Zionism (*Star of David*), Freemasonry, and Communism, which has spread it’s evil empire in many regions (*countries*), areas of traffic (*rivers and lakes*), and the country is identified by it’s accident. In the physical sense ‘*wormwood*’ has already happened. An accident on 25 and 26 April, 1986 at the Chernobyl (*which some translators have said that the meaning is ‘wormwood’*), nuclear power station in the Soviet Union, released large amounts of radioactive material into the atmosphere, where it was carried great distances by air currents. A cover-up was attempted by the Communists, but they were pressed for an explanation, which was unsatisfactory. Radioactive debris was buried at temporary sites, and later in the year the highly radioactive reactor core was enclosed in a concrete-and-steel sarcophagus (which was later deemed structurally unsound). Many deaths and serious radiation sickness resulted. It is estimated that 185 million curies of radio nuclides escaped into the atmosphere, which was several times more radioactivity than that created by the atomic bombs dropped on Hiroshima and Nagasaki,

Japan. This radioactivity was spread by the wind over Belarus, Russia, and Ukraine and then reached as far west as France and Italy. Millions of acres of forest and farmland were contaminated, and are still unusable.

Zionism/Freemasonry/Communism/Islam has brought war against religion, and this brings bitterness (*wormwood*). These satanic cults use the terrorist armies like ISIS and al Qaeda to help butcher and destroy Christians and Christianity. Many have died for want of water, that is for want of the Word of Life, because they choose the bitterness of atheistic darkness. Jesus said: "He that believes in Me, as the scripture says: Out of his belly shall flow rivers of Living Water" (*Jn 7:38*). The people of unbelief will have death threatening thirst. The people of God will have His miracles providing the necessities of life. "Was not bitter water made sweet with wood?" (*Si 38:5*). God's people are always protected.

"And the fourth angel sounded the trumpet: and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars, so that the third part of them was darkened. And the day did not shine for a third part of it, and the night in like manner" (8:12).

The *third part of the sun* is the authority of the Church being greatly diminished by Coptic, Orthodox, Protestant and Vatican II error, heresies, and scandals and schisms.

The *third part of the moon* is again the governments disobedience to God's law, the teaching of Jesus, the traditions of the early Church.

The *third part of the stars*, are popes and bishops who caused the heresies.

The *day* the Seven Sacraments which *will not shine* on heretics.

The *night* is the time without Christ, and without love.

This fourth trumpet begins the melting of the elements (*sun smitten*).

This *darkness* is a fact, but there is also the mystical meaning that shows we must be separate from unbelievers. "What concord has Christ with Belial? Or what part has the faithful with the unbeliever?" (*2Co 6:15*).

All of the trumpets attack the works of the Devil (*night*), and warn us to seek penance for our sins and avoid evil. The darkness (*evil*) is a reminder that Satan is the prince of darkness, and so Jesus said: "I am come, a Light into the world, that whosoever believes in Me may not

remain in darkness (*Jn 12:46*), yet so very few believe Him. Now they will have a chance to remember and convert. There will be conversions, for Jesus has told us that He will get their attention.

“And I beheld: and heard the voice of one eagle flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice: Woe, Woe, Woe to the inhabitants of the earth, by reason of the rest of the voices of the three angels, who are yet to sound the trumpet!” (8:13).

If the first four trumpets were not a cause for woe, what then must the warning of *Woe, Woe, Woe*, to come be like? The intensity of the Great Tribulation will grow in severity, and spread rapidly. Who is *the eagle flying through the midst of heaven*? It is wisdom of the knowledge of the three woes to come. Jesus said: “Wheresoever the body shall be, there shall the eagles also be gathered together” (*Mt 24:28*). This body is the Body of Christ! Those gathered together are the Mystical Body of Christ. *The one flying through the midst of heaven*, that is the heaven of the atmosphere, is Eucharistic man.

The invitations have, and are being given. The warnings have, and are being given. We will see shortly that the door will be shut!

Chapter 9

The bottomless pit. The army of 200 million

We see now the next two of the Seven Trumpets:

5th Trumpet: 1st Woe: Hell let loose. 9:1-12.

6th Trumpet: 2nd Woe: fire, smoke, brimstone. 9:13-11:14.

Before we begin this chapter, let us reflect what Jesus said: “There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when you shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the Kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out” (*Lk 13:28*). Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and all the prophets had faith, for without faith it is impossible to please God (*Hb 11:6*). You are urged to step out in faith, not in rules and Pharisaic laws, but in pure faith. We can succeed in the Great Tribulation if we have put our trust in God, and acted on that trust with deeds to match our words, otherwise: “Faith without works is dead?” (*Jm 2:20*).

The events in next three trumpets, 5, 6, and 7, come at an alarming speed. There is no let-up, no respite, no comfort, no escape for the ungodly, until all the plan of God is accomplished.

“And the fifth angel sounded the trumpet, and I saw a star fall from heaven upon the earth. And there was given to him the key of the bottomless pit (9:1).

The *star which fell from heaven* was a high prelate who made reliance on his own knowledge, rather than on the gift of Holy Orders conferred on him at his ordination, and extended as he was elevated to higher offices within the True Catholic Church. This is said because ‘*there was given to him the key of the bottomless pit,*’ and this ‘*key*’ is the power to exorcize Satan and his evil minions and cast them out of the Church, binding them and sending them to hell. We saw in chapter 1 that a *star* was a bishop of the Church, so now we will see that this was a very mighty star because of the havoc he raised, and he had to be a pope, as the pope is the ‘*bishop of Rome.*’ We will see in chapter 17 that he is under the total control of Zionism using Freemasonry as his cloak. The argument will be made that the ‘*Israel*’ state created in 1948 is the beast

‘as it were slain to death, and his death’s wound was healed, and all the earth was in admiration after the beast’ (*Apoc 13:3*). Let this thought develop!

“And he opened the bottomless pit, and the smoke of the pit arose, as the smoke of a great furnace. And the sun and the air were darkened with the smoke of the pit” (9:2).

This *bottomless pit* is not the hell of fire and brimstone, (which we dealt with under 1:1,2), but an abyss full of hatred and revenge, from which the evil spirits will later be sent to ‘the hell of fire’ for all eternity. Proof that the bottomless pit is not hell is to be found in scripture when God talks of the ‘lowest hell’ thus giving it dimension: “A fire is kindled in My wrath, and shall burn even to the lowest hell: and shall devour the earth with her increase, and shall burn the foundations of the mountains” (*Dt 32:22*). David prayed: “For Thy mercy is great towards me, and Thou hast delivered my soul out of the lower hell” (*Ps 85:13*). Solomon says: “The path of life is above for the wise, that he may decline from the lowest hell” (*Pr 15:24*). Again it is written: “But they that during that night, in which nothing could be done, and which came upon them from the lowest and deepest hell, slept the same sleep” (*Ws 17:13*). Saint Peter writes: “For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but delivered them, drawn down by infernal ropes to the lower hell, unto torments, to be reserved unto judgment” (*2P2:4,5*).

The *sun is darkened* because the power and authority of truth has been compromised with grave error. Liberalism and atheistic ecumenism has allowed the power of Freemasonry to enter the Church at the highest level, and bring with it, the horrors of Zionism, Communism and Islam.

Angelo Cardinal Roncalli was elected Pope John XXIII on 28 October 1958, convoked the Roman Synod, established the Commission for the Revision of the Code of Canon Law. The new code eliminated the name of Freemasons directly, and also the condemnation of Freemasonry, which previous condemnation excommunicated all members of that society. The Vatican II Council changed the original Latin Vulgate Bible, changed the Mass, changed the Sabbath from Sunday to include Saturday evening, and changed the administration of the Sacraments.

John XXIII died on 3 June 1963, and was beatified by Pope John Paul II on 3 June, 2000, canonized by 'pope' Francis on 27 April 2014. Paper will take ink!

When he was created cardinal in 1953, he received the zucchetto (pileolus in Latin), the skullcap, from Pope Pius XII. He insisted upon receiving the Cardinal's biretta from the avowed atheist, anti-Catholic, and notoriously anti-clerical, 33^o Mason, Vincent Auriol, Socialist President of France (1947-54). He actually knelt down before the Freemason Auriol in order to accept the Cardinal's biretta. In this act Roncalli bowed down to his worshipful master - Satan. The master of all ranking Masons is Satan, and from the 19th degree onward they call Satan their worshipful master and grand architect of the universe. As Pope John XXIII, on 13th April 1959 received Auriol as his guest at the Vatican! (Please note that April is the 4th month - that is the 1+3 month, a Masonic '13' signal)! Why the 13th? 13 in spiritual numbers signifies 'treachery' and is Satan's number. '13' is the number which Freemasons claim as their standard. So on the 13th of the 13th (1+3 month) John XXIII received his Masonic co-conspirator at the Headquarters of the Roman Catholic Church! It should be noted that John XXIII was the name of the 37th 'pope' who in actual fact was an anti-pope who existed from 1410-1415. Why did he take this name? X-XIII (10+13), that is to accentuate the 13, the commandments of Satan's Freemasonry.

In 1960 he disobeyed Mary, the Mother of Jesus Christ, Mother of the Church, Queen of Heaven and earth, angels and men, who had requested that the Third Secret of Fatima should be made public to the world on the death of the visionary Lucia, or in 1960 whichever came first. John XXIII, refused to make the message public. Would then Christ Jesus hand the scepter of authority into the hands of one who kneels to Satan? Would Jesus give His Church into the power of evil? Of course not! While John XXIII held all the titles of a Pope, he never was a true pope. While John XXIII held all the titles of a Pope, he never was a true pope in the eyes of Jesus.

What then can be said of the successive popes? If they implemented the errors of John XXIII, then they too received not the scepter from Jesus.

They held the titles of pope, but did not receive the authority of or from God. Why is this so? The framers and executioners of Vatican II promoted the errors of that Council, took the structure of the administration out of the One True, Holy Catholic and Apostolic Church, and formed a new church called the (novo) Roman Catholic Church, which is the entity we see today. Vatican II brought the (novo) Roman Catholic Church almost as low as the Protestant, Orthodox and Coptic heresies.

What about the ordinations to the priesthood, and elevations to episcopal offices since then? Because the new Roman church is in error, teaches and preaches error, then all ordinations and elevations are executed into error. The priests ordained into the current neo Roman Catholic Church are priests of man, not priests of God.

As we continue with the understanding of this verse, '*smoke of the pit arose...and the sun and the air were darkened*', it is understood that the filthy demons (*smoke*) infested the minds (*air*) of mankind with sin, ugly designs, thoughts, and rebellion. The demons coming out are those who had been bound to silence and inactivity for 'a thousand years' until the end of time. Now, at this the end of time, they are let *loose* by one who had the '*key*' and they come with a vengeance, against the priesthood which sent them there. It is reported in Italian Jesuit magazine, *The Catholic Civilization*, that 69,063 priests left the ministry between 1964 and 2004, who said that these statistics were based on information provided by the bishops to the Vatican. "By their fruits you shall know them" (*Mt 7:16*).

"And from the smoke of the pit there came out locusts upon the earth. And power was given to them, as the scorpions of the earth have power" (9:3).

These *locusts* are heretics and schismatics, and they are as *scorpions* with their false doctrines and protesting evangelical easy solutions to comfortable living. The *locusts* are also military terrorists who have power to strike with speed against any target they desire from their position of subtle advantage. These terrorists (*locusts*) are in every department and infrastructure in every country of the world today, for

instance: government, economics, religious, communications, you name it. Their message is ‘religious’ darkness (*black smoke*), but they will be defeated as we shall see.

“And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, nor any green thing, nor any tree, but only the men who have not the sign of God on their foreheads” (9:4).

Here ‘*the grass of the earth*’ is the natural habitat of those in the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church. ‘*Any green thing*’ are the innocent people who are searching for the truth. The ‘*trees*’ are the rulers and officials both religious and political who are searching for truth and ruling with justice, in spite of persecution from their superiors.

The *locusts* who are also heretics and schismatics, have no power against nature nor against those who are under the protection of Eucharistic man. The locusts have power against unbelieving man, that is, those who serve evil and deny the Seven Sacraments.

“And it was given unto them that they should not kill them, but that they should torment them five months. And their torment was as the torment of a scorpion when he strikes a man” (9:5).

Almighty God allows these evil spirits living in man, to test unbelieving man ‘who have not the sign of God in their foreheads.’ These torments are an effort to get man to see his evil way, convert and return to the Truth, using the grace (*spiritual meaning of 5*) of our Merciful God. The *torments* also are a foretaste of the pains of Hell.

“And in those days, men shall seek death and shall not find it. And they shall desire to die, and death shall fly from them” (9:6).

Since the whole way of safe and comfortable life is destroyed, and all the ungodly population is now living in abject poverty, and fear, so *death* will be preferred - but denied to them at that time, as God is still seeking souls to convert and return to Him. This is a time when those in torment who return will have served their Purgatory while living on earth. More on this later.

Consider here that literally all Hell is let loose. These demons are

sicknesses, suicides, diseases, accidents, plagues, famine, drought, arguments, war, insurrections, terrorism, and all the evils you can imagine because the abyss was full of them.

Only those people who are in the state of grace, that is totally without sin, will be immune from the attacks of the evil ones. Simply stated, Eucharistic man will be free from the attacks on his person, but Eucharistic man will suffer to see his loved ones, and friends, and neighbors, and the world population in general suffer so greatly, when they could have avoided it. (Notice I said ‘avoided’ not any other word)!

“And the shapes of the locusts were like unto horses prepared unto battle. And on their heads were, as it were, crowns like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men” (9:7).

Jet fighters, yes, and more than that. Consider a *horse* coming charging against defenceless you. You have no weapon against him. But these ‘horses’ are ‘men’ having the human power of materialistic worldly man (*gold*). The only defense against them is the spirit of the Living God through the Seven Sacraments, which so many reject and rely on their own egotistical understanding.

“And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as lions” (9:8).

The ‘*hair of women*’ indicates that inside they are fearful and cowards, using the bravado of appearance to hide their true self. They are evil spirits and vicious and vengeful (*lion’s teeth*), and rely on their position for safety. I interject here that some of our greatest heroes and martyrs are women - need we look further than our Blessed Mother, Mary Magdalene, Joan of Arc to name a few!

As a physical description they could be described as the roaring fighter planes, with pictures or decals or art work of the pilot’s choosing, depicting women, jaw-teeth, demons, artillery, and the like. It is more than that. It is the swift and ferocious attack by the demons of evil using every allurements to destroy their prey.

“And they had breastplates as breastplates of iron, and the noise of their

wings was as the noise of chariots and many horses running to battle” (9:9). The evil spirits let loose from the bottomless pit are battle tested (*breastplates of iron*), boastful (*noise*) and numerous (*many*), always on the attack (*running to battle*), for Satan is a cruel task master.

In the physical sense, see here the descriptions of noisy helicopters with their guns, fore and aft. Unless one is in the protection of Eucharistic Christ Jesus they will be unable to stand against the attacks from the demons. It is during this time that some will convert and avoid hell, as they reach out for the Divine Mercy of God.

“And they had tails like to scorpions, and there were stings in their tails. And their power was to hurt men, five months” (9:10).

The *scorpion’s tail* indicates their cunning and deceptiveness. While at first encounter it might seem that the unsuspecting have braved the fray, there is a surprise attack from the *scorpions tail*, but the grace (*spiritual five*) is available for those who reach out and take it.

‘*The locusts*’ are also the heretics and anti-christs, mostly to be found in the Zionists, Masonic, Communist and Muslim societies, whose plan is to conquer the world by sword, and any act of terror which will achieve their goal. Their master is Satan, and have no doubt about it. There are many other groups who fit this category, and we will see these explained fully in chapter 17 when we deal with the seven kings and the eighth.

“And they had over them a king, the angel of the bottomless pit {whose name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greek Apollyon, in Latin Exterminans}” (9:11).

The three-fold translation of his name means that he is universal or worldwide. He is the exterminator, whose title is ‘*king*,’ the ‘*angel of the bottomless pit*,’ and whose designs are to bring all people to hell, and destroy the followers of Christ Jesus Eucharist.

The most common identification of the ‘exterminator’ is the Antichrist, and some have even said that the heretic Martin Luther and Protestantism was the Antichrist. Well, this is a convenient explanation, but one which is not informed with knowledge. Antichrist is a politician,

a political ruler, not a religious personality. The False Prophet is a religious ruler. Remember that Satan must always have an Antichrist in place: “and as you have heard that Antichrist comes, even now there are become many Antichrists” (1Jn 2:18). Why is this so? Because, “of that day or hour no man knows, neither the angels in Heaven, nor the Son, but the Father” (Mk 13:32).

As Satan must always have his antichrists and false prophets in place, like Stalin, Mao, and Hitler, so at the present day we see evil political rulers more vicious and more sneaky than the above trio. He is a combination Zionist/Freemason/Communist, and he has the cunning to hide two of the above three characteristics. He is a Zionist and most likely from Israel, with the backing of the United States and the Russian/Chinese countries. He can pretend to be Israelite, or Christian, but in fact he is non-practicing, but is a closet Satan worshiper. He will not use the Name of Almighty God, but claim to be the Messiah, and will use such words as Providence, Super Being, Master, the Awaited One. We will identify him again in 13:1.

“One woe is past: and behold there come yet two woes more hereafter” (9:12).

This first *woe* sets the stage for the final battle of Good versus Evil. When these things come to pass, know that the final battle is at hand. If you think the foregoing was bad, there is even worse is to come.

“And the sixth angel sounded the trumpet: and I heard a voice from the four horns of the Golden Altar which is before the eyes of God” (9:13).

The horn in the scriptures signifies strength, power, and a means of communication. Here on the *four corners of the Golden Altar* it means an exaltation and an increase of strength and glory to those who offer sacrifices to God Almighty. Here we see Eucharistic man standing in the spiritual strength of God, praying for the defeat of the evil spirits of the devil. The number 6 is the number for man, imperfection and iniquity.

“saying to the sixth angel who had the trumpet: ‘Loose the four angels who are bound in the great river Euphrates’” (9:14).

The Euphrates was the fourth river in Paradise (Gn 2:14), meaning

complete or universal, and it is in the East, (which spiritually means birth). With the other three rivers, it encompassed inside them the boundaries of God's Kingdom of Paradise. Outside of it is enemy territory. Outside of it, the east gives birth to a reign of terror upon the world never before seen or experienced. These four (spiritual completeness) evil angels are let loose with a vengeance. The Euphrates is the region surrounded by Islam and Communism. An 'Unholy Alliance' has been established by Russia which incorporates anti-Christ countries, and it is from this source that the reign of terror will descend upon the whole world. We will deal with this 'Unholy Alliance' more fully in chapters 13 and 17.

"And the four angels were loosed, who were prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year, for to kill the third part of men" (9:15).

We find that all those people who are lukewarm in the faith are now going to be challenged. Jesus said previously: "Because you are lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will begin to vomit you out of My mouth" (*Apoc 3:16*). These evil spirits have one mission from the Devil himself, 'get all souls on earth to Hell.' The tribulation which the lukewarm people will have will be exceedingly great, for they disbelieved or were 'politically correct.' Now they will have a chance to make a firm decision for or against God. For *an hour, a day* etc. means that the prescribed time is determined and measured. We must pray for all lukewarm souls that they change their ways now before it is too late. It is not just the hordes of the militia of the evil nations that will be such a terror, but also the hordes of evil spirits let loose from Hell!

"And the number of the army of horsemen was twenty thousand times ten thousand. And I heard the number of them" (9:16).

There is an army of 200,000,000, that is 200 million coming against the 'free-world.' For those who are aware of world events in the year 2019, you will see that there is a shift in economic power from Europe and North America to China, Russia, and the Muslim world. As of this writing, it is not clear the magnitude of the Chinese army, but it is causing alarm in what is known as 'the West.' Who can oppose it? If the might of the United States could not defeat the forces in Iraq, what force can withstand the 200 million army of the combined China, Russia, and

the Muslim world? Look about you, what do you see? Do you see the physical forces mustering up? Do you see that technology is insufficient if there is not the ‘surge-force’ to back it up? The sixth angel has sounded his trumpet, and are you aware? When it says *‘I heard the number of them’* it is a certification that the number of the evil army is correct. Also included in the 200 million are all the terrorists of the world ‘legal’ and ‘illegal.’

“And thus I saw the horses in the vision. And they that sat on them had breastplates of fire, and of hyacinth, and of brimstone. And the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions, and from their mouths proceeded fire and smoke and brimstone, and by these three plagues was slain the third part of men, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouths. For the power of the horses is in their mouths, and in their tails. For, their tails are like to serpents and have heads, and with them they hurt” (9:17,18,19).

Look at the mystical understanding. The agents of death are the Devils going about the world seeking whom they may devour (*1P 5:8*). They protect themselves with their hiddenness, and with their strength of their hidden evil spirituality. If they do not get you one way, they get you another. Now look at the physical. This army is loaded with modern equipment, of the best defense, breastplates *of fire* and *of hyacinth* and *of brimstone*, and the best offense including intercontinental missiles, unmanned drones, etc., *from their mouths proceeded ‘fire and smoke and brimstone,’* and by these three plagues of modern warfare was slain *the third part of men*. The third part of men in a world population of 8 billion people would be over 2 billion. That is a lot of burying details. “And the house of Israel shall bury them for seven months to cleanse the land” (*Ez 3:12*).

“And the rest of the men, who were not slain by these plagues, did not do penance from the works of their hands, that they should not adore devils, and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and wood, which neither can see nor hear nor walk, neither did they penance from their murders, nor from their sorceries, nor from their fornication, nor from their thefts” (9:20,21).

Obstinate man has embraced the lures of Hell, but will he now reject

their torments and change his ways?

Obstinate man is now rebelling against the horrors of Hell, but will he change his ways?

Obstinate man is rebelling against God, but will he change his ways and embrace God?

What more has God to do to save mankind? When will men listen?

Chapter 10

The mighty angel. The seven thunders

“And I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud, and a rainbow was on his head, and his face as the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire” (10:1).

The ‘mighty angel’ is an individual Eucharistic man. He is coming down from heaven with awesome threatening power (*cloud*), and with the covenant (*rainbow*) of God fulfilled in himself. He has unity in God, which includes Divine knowledge and insight (*face as the sun*), and God has confirmed and established him in the work which he must carry out (*feet as pillars of fire*).

“And he had in his hand a little book, open. And he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot upon the earth, and he cried with a loud voice as when a lion roars” (10:2,3a).

God has put into the hand of Eucharistic man *a book*, in which He has given him the understanding and the instruction of the mystery of the Word which is contained therein, and ready to be revealed (*little book open*). He has power over all the earth (*right foot upon the sea, and his left foot upon the earth*), sending fear upon the inhabitants of the earth (*lion roars*). He is the Great Monarch, Petrus Romanus.

“And when he had cried, seven thunders uttered their voices” (10:3b).

When he had made his proclamation which is like a flash of lightning, ‘seven thunders uttered their voices,’ that is, the strong dogmatic declarations of the missionaries of the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church in these the very last days. These declarations will be powerful in their teachings, will not be politically correct nor mince their words, and shall not be silenced. On the other hand, the opponents of God will react with a loud, angry voice, as they threaten to move heavily and forcefully against Eucharistic man who is *the ‘mighty angel’*.

“And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write. And I heard a voice from heaven saying to me: ‘Seal up the things which the seven thunders have spoken, and write them not’” (10:4).

Saint John heard the seven thunders and their mission. Their plan is not made known at this time (*seal up*), because in the time of the end (*in which we now live*), if it had been written before hand what they would say or do, then the freewill of arrogant man would have previously reacted even more obstinately. The ‘*voice from heaven*’ is the Great Monarch intervening and directing all things, for in Eucharistic union, he knows what is best, and the best moment when each event is to be made known.

“And the angel whom I saw standing upon the sea, and upon the earth, lifted up his hand to Heaven, and he swore by Him that lives for ever and ever, Who created Heaven and the things which are therein, and the earth and the things which are in it, and the sea and the things which are therein: ‘That time shall be no longer’” (10:5,6).

The Great Monarch, Eucharistic man, by the power of the unity of God in himself, is able to swear by God. The argument is made that this swearing is contrary to Scripture for Jesus said: “I say to you not to swear at all, neither by Heaven for it is the Throne of God” (*Mt 5:34*). That argument has no value here as the opposite is true, for Eucharistic man is making a solemn declaration, and is swearing by God, for it says in another place: “For God making promises to Abraham, because He had no one greater by whom He might swear, swore by Himself...For men swear by one greater than themselves, and an oath for confirmation is the end of all their controversy” (*Hb 6:13,16*). So here now Eucharistic man *swears* in and by the authority of God, and makes a solemn proclamation which in Eucharistic unity and oneness he declares: *“That time shall be no longer.”* Now the measurement used for time as we know it will not be the clock on the wall, or the watch on the wrist, but from now on ‘*time*’ will be measured by the events taking place.

“But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound the trumpet, the mystery of God shall be finished, as He has declared by His servants the prophets” (10:7).

The mystery of God is finished which is: Eucharistic man is the unity of God in man, and the unity of man in God, uniting the Divinity of God in the humanity of man (*2PI:1-4,10*), giving birth to the ‘new man,’ the ‘new creature,’ living in the fulness of the Mystical Body of Christ in the

Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, which is *the Temple of God, and the Altar*, and those that adore therein (*Apoc 11:1*). We will deal more fully with this in the next chapter.

“And I heard a voice from heaven, again speaking to me and saying: ‘Go and take the book that is open, from the hand of the angel who stands upon the sea and upon the earth’ (10:8).

Saint John is given a command from the Great Monarch in the Church (*heaven*), to *take the book that is open* (now revealed) *from the angel* (Eucharistic man). The confidence of Eucharistic man to give the book to Saint John shows the unity of God in man, and the full trust which Eucharistic man has in God, and God in Eucharistic man, which is perfect harmony.

“And I went to the angel, saying unto him that he should give me the book. And he said to me: ‘Take the book and eat it up. And it shall make thy belly bitter, but in thy mouth it shall be sweet as honey.’ (10:9).

He had to *ask the angel for the book*, signifying obedience, and also signifying that the angel knowing it’s contents alerts him that it will be good to know the events to come (*in your mouth sweet as honey*), but the events to come will be distressing (*bitter in the belly*).

“And I took the book from the hand of the angel and ate it up, and it was in my mouth, sweet as honey. And when I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.” (10:10).

For those of us now living in the end of time, it is best to have absolute trust in God, without being super-inquisitive about the details of future events.

“And he said to me: ‘You must prophesy again to many nations, and peoples, and tongues, and kings’ (10:11).

Saint John wrote the Fourth Gospel, three Letters, and now he is told to write the Apocalypse which is the Prophetical book of the New Testament. (It is worth noting that the Old Testament has four main categories: Original, Historical, Wisdom, Prophetical, which are the exact same categories of the New). So now Saint John was told that he must write the only prophetical book of the New Testament *‘to many*

nations, and peoples, and tongues, and kings.’

Saint John thus *prophesies again* in the prophetical book of the New Testament beginning with the words: “The Revelation of Jesus Christ” which explains completely the coming of Jesus Christ, Christ Jesus.

Chapter 11

The Temple. Two witnesses. Seventh Trumpet

We see now the last of the Seven Trumpets:

7th Trumpet: 3rd Woe: Satan cast onto earth. 11:15-12:12.

“And there was given me a reed, like unto a rod. And it was said to me: ‘Arise, and measure the Temple of God, and the Altar, and them that adore therein” (11:1).

Here the events on earth take a new turn. Petrus Romanus gives authority to Saint John to make a measurement of the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, and then do something about those outside of it. We must now examine more closely the person of Petrus Romanus. We have said that he is the Authority of Christ, the last Pope to reign until the end of time. But he cannot be in the ‘same old, same old’ mold of the popes since John XXIII, who were truly heretics and schismatics, who established a church and priesthood for and of man. Jesus said: “No man puts new wine into old bottles, otherwise the wine will burst the bottles, and both the wine will be spilled and the bottles will be lost. But new wine must be put into new bottles” (*Mk 2:22*). Petrus Romanus has to be divinely appointed as were Saints Peter and Paul (*Ga 1:11,12*). He will not be ‘conclave’ elected, although a very few cardinals will ‘acclaim’ him pope. His authority is from Christ Jesus, and his accountability is to Christ Jesus. He will speak with divine insight and knowledge. He is not one of the ‘two witnesses’ but he is closely associated with them. It is he who is instructing Saint John in the events of the Apocalypse taking place.

Jesus Christ in His earthly mission certified His High Priesthood and His Kingship over all creation, it is therefore obvious that He would make His final Authority both High Priest and King, in the combined office of Petrus Romanus and Great Monarch, in His Eucharisted man.

If we consider that a ‘reed’ is a long, slender plant which grows in well watered grounds, and here it is used as a measuring instrument. The well watered ground would mean that the ‘reed’ is to measure the number of

people who keep God's commandments and precepts. On the other hand, a *rod* is a slender straight stick cut from a tree or bush, it is the symbol of authority, and is used for the correction of some by flogging, and here the '*rod*' would be used to make serious corrections of the so-called 'Christians' and others who say they believe in God, but only on their own terms. The Church which Jesus left to us has divided into many thousand pieces, each piece claiming authority and perfection in Christ. Each 'church' claims to know the truth of God, and want to direct and correct God's ways. God is having none of that. He knows that He is God, no other!

Saint John *measures the Temple, and the Altar*, and finds (*reed*) that there are only a very few people in the Eucharistic Church. They know, live the Seven Sacraments, and who have opened their hearts to God. Jesus asked: "But yet the Son of man, when he comes, shall he find, think you, faith on earth?" (*Lk 18:8*). The people of faith are those who adore Him in spirit and in truth. Saint John remembers well what Jesus said: "The hour comes, and now is, when the true adorers shall adore the Father in spirit and in truth, for the Father also seeks such to adore Him. God is a spirit, and they that adore Him, must adore Him in spirit and in truth" (*Jn 4:23,24*). The only true adorers on earth at this time, are those living The Seven Sacraments in the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church. God is in the Temple of their hearts.

It is at this time when the most spectacular event in the history of conversions to Christ Jesus takes place. We saw in Chapter 2 the warning to the Church of Ephesus about hating liars. Now comes the fulfilment of one of the prophecies given to Daniel: "But at that time shall Michael rise up, the great prince, who stands for the children of thy people, and a time shall come, such as never was from the time that nations began, even until that time. And at that time shall thy people be saved, every one that shall be found written in the book. And many of those that sleep in the dust of the earth, shall awake: some unto life everlasting, and others unto reproach, to see it always. But they that are learned, shall shine as the brightness of the firmament: and they that instruct many to justice, as stars for all eternity" (*Dn 12:1-3*). That is, the armies that are in Heaven, waiting for the call to start the final

evangelization and destruction of the ungodly begins. We will deal with this in greater detail in Apocalypse 19: 11-18. The ‘head bishops’ of the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church will be directing the operations in their individual continents.

“but the court which is without the Temple, cast out and measure it not, because it is given unto the Gentiles, and the Holy City they shall tread under foot, two and forty months” (11:2).

In the measurements he finds that separation and severe correction is necessary, the severity of the correction is excommunication for the masses whose faith stands on the ecumenical wisdom of men, and not on the power of God (*1Co 2:5*). These are corrected, excommunicated, cast out (*rod*) of the Temple, because they have not the truth, they have not the faith, that is, they have not on their wedding garment (*the Seven Sacraments*).

Remember here the parable which Jesus used: “The king went in to see the guests, and he saw there a man who had not on a wedding garment. And he said to him: ‘Friend, how came you in here not having on a wedding garment?’ But he was silent. Then the king said to the waiters: ‘Bind his hands and feet, and cast him into the exterior darkness. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth’ (*Mt 22:11-13*).

With the rod of the anger of God, the selfish and arrogant stiff-necked who do not accept the humility and truth of God, are cast out into the (*outer courtyard*) with their fellow unbelievers, (*the Gentiles*). They will rebel (*tread under foot*) against the proclamation of God (*the Holy City*), and where they will live out the great tribulation, symbolically (two and forty months) amid painful weeping and gnashing of teeth.

“And I will give unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy, a thousand two hundred sixty days, clothed in sackcloth” (11:3).

It is commonly accepted that these two witnesses are Enoch and Elijah. Some people may also take ‘*My two witnesses*’ to mean the Old and New Testaments, but I am not inclined to accept this.

A witness is one who sees an event take place, in physical actuality or

prophetically, while most would agree that true prophesy is seeing things in physical actuality. A witness is also an open profession of one's religious faith through words and/or actions.

When it is said that *'I will give unto my two witnesses'* the general opinion is that this is Jesus speaking. This is not so. Why? Because Petrus Romanus is addressing Saint John, and therefore it is he who is speaking. If it were Jesus speaking, he would also include Saint John as a witness, and who better than he who witnessed the life, passion, death and events after the resurrection of Jesus?

Enoch is a witness because he walked with God, as it is written: "Enoch walked with God...and was seen no more, because God took him" (*Gn 5:22,24*). It is also foretold that Enoch will have some spectacular work to do: "Enoch pleased God, and was translated into Paradise, that he may give repentance to the nations" (*Si 44:16*).

Elijah also is a witness because he "...went up by a whirlwind into Heaven" (*4K 2:11 {also known as 2K 4:11 in Hebrew}*). Like Enoch, it is also foretold that he will have spectacular work to do: "I will send you Elijah the prophet, before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord" (*Mal 4:5*).

They did not die and it is expected that they will return to earth and fulfill their human life, and die as all other mortals, and more so, they will die martyrs.

When it is said that *'they shall prophesy, a thousand two hundred sixty days,'* that is, they will proclaim the truth of God, yes for the 1,260 days, but also this time represents to the unbelievers and antagonists of Christ, a long time (*1,000 days*) and come to Christ, (2 is the Second Person of the Holy Trinity), giving them double time to repent, (*100 is plentitude*), leave the error of man, (*6 is man*), and return or come into the Divine order of God (*10 is perfection, order, fulness*). Being *clothed in sackcloth* is that the two witnesses will come into a world of physical and spiritual destitution and faithlessness (*sackcloth*), where the hearts of many have grown cold, and love of God and neighbor is almost non-

existent in a mostly faithless world.

“These are the two olive trees, and the two candlesticks, that stand before the lord of the earth” (11:4).

Olive trees produce olive oil which is used for anointing priests, kings and true believers in the Holy Ghost: “I have found David My servant, with My holy oil I have anointed him” (*Ps 88:21*). Here they are symbols of the Mercy of God and the divine office of priest, prophet and king. In the spiritual sense, the *two candlesticks* signify the Old Testament (*First Testament*) and the New Testament (*Second Testament*), giving their enlightenment and anointing (*holding the olive trees*) to the whole world through faith and good works. Together this is the Eucharistic unity of man in God and God in man. These *two witnesses* have seen Eucharistic man in physical actuality, first in the resurrected Christ Jesus, Who is the New Man, the First Eucharistic Man, and second in Petrus Romanus, Eucharistic man, the first born to Christ Jesus, and Christ Jesus is the Father of the world. Therefore Petrus Romanus can say: ‘*I will give unto my two witnesses!*’ The word of the Lord stands firm in all the earth: “These are two sons of oil who stand before the Lord of the whole earth” (*Zc 4:14*).

In the physical sense, these two faithful witnesses are united with Eucharistic man, who by the grace of God, have under Jesus Christ, the Orient, built the Temple to the Lord, that is, God in man, and man in God, “and the counsel of peace shall be between them both. And they that are far off, shall come and shall build in the Temple of the Lord...But this shall come to pass, if hearing you will hear the voice of the Lord your God” (*Zc 6:12,13,15*). Eucharistic man has allowed God His way in leading the children of God (*sons of God*), out of the bondage of Zionism, Freemasonry, Communism and Islam, the (*sons of men*).

When it is said: “...*that stand before the lord of the earth,*” that is, they acknowledge the authority which Christ Jesus has given to His Monarch, Petrus Romanus, and are witnesses to what they have seen.

Will we recognize the two faithful witnesses, the two people? Some people (*Eucharistic man*) will, the greater majority will not, until after

they see them rise up from the dead, as identified in what follows.

“And if any man will hurt them, fire shall come out of their mouths and shall devour their enemies. And if any man will hurt them, in this manner must he be slain” (11:5).

This miraculous work will get attention, and they have the power to fill the hearers of their words with inspiration and enlightenment of the Holy Ghost. The ‘fire’ is the purifying word of God which they shall speak, and the errors of the false prophets will be exposed, so that those who want to repent and convert will be saved, and the spirits of error will be devoured. If people choose to ignore their teachings, it is written: “He that hurts, let him hurt still” (*Apoc 22:11*). The faithful witnesses will also go on the attack against those who intend to harm their ministry, to stop their evangelization of the whole world: “He that shall kill by the sword must be killed by the sword” (*Apoc 13:10*). This ‘killing’ is by the spirit of God, after they have rejected God’s call, He then allows them to stay in the hands of the evil.

“These have power to shut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy, and they have power over waters, to turn them into blood and to strike the earth with all plagues, as often as they will” (11:6).

‘These have power to shut heaven,’ may be interpreted as those who violently reject and oppose the words of God which the witnesses speak, the ears and eyes and hearts of the obstinate are shut closed to God’s Grace, and so God will not come to them any more because they have refused His Grace.

There is another way to look at this: ‘These have power to shut heaven,’ meaning that they can and will cause droughts, and plagues as written. Because they are in the Will of God, they have His authority and power to cause havoc to the infidels of the earth (so-called ‘christians’ and others), as often as they will it.

“And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast that ascends out of the abyss shall make war against them and shall overcome them and kill them. And their bodies shall lie in the streets of the great city which is called spiritually, Sodom and Egypt, where their

Lord also was crucified” (11:7,8).

Notice here again that God is in control. ‘*And when they have finished their testimony,*’ that is not before! God does not allow *the beast from the abyss* any power to be exercised against them, until they finish their testimony.

The abyss is the bottomless place from whence Satan comes up (*Apoc 20:7*). So the devil in the form of a man kills them in the place which is spiritually called ‘*Sodom and Egypt.*’ The spiritual meaning of these two names is immorality and money. It is called *Sodom* for their prostitution of the word of God, and *Egypt*, for their ecclesiastical Freemasonry, Zionism and Communism, and being centered on money and wealth, not the care of the flock. So where is this spiritually identified church or city? It is every so-called ‘Christian’ church which rejects all or part of the Seven Sacraments, and/or hordes the accumulation of money and tangible assets as a necessary part of their egotistical existence. It also means Rome, and more specifically Vatican City, where until 1958, Jesus was present in the Blessed Sacrament, Holy Eucharist. But because of the changing of the words of the Consecration of the Mass, into words which Jesus did not say, then Jesus could no longer come on the altars of the ‘new’ Vatican II Catholicism of Rome because He was crucified in the last bastion of Christianity therefore it is written: ‘*where their Lord also was crucified.*’ The ‘second’ John XXIII released Satan from the pit.

“And they of the tribes, and peoples, and tongues, and nations, shall see their bodies for three days and a half, and they shall not suffer their bodies to be laid in sepulchers. And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoice over them and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another, because these two prophets tormented them that dwelt upon the earth” (11:9,10).

Because of the havoc which the two witnesses caused, the wealthy and self-confident in their own importance, will *rejoice* and think that they have won with their liberal religious and protestantism philosophy, and so to have defeated God. Every religion (*tribe*), language, country, and nation of idolaters (*churches*), will celebrate and will trample on the truth of the Old and New Testaments, rejoicing in the tower of Babel of

erroneously translated bibles, rejecting the Truth preached by the two witnesses who tormented them.

“And after three days and a half, the spirit of life from God entered into them. And they stood upon their feet, and great fear fell upon them that saw them. And they heard a great voice from Heaven, saying to them: ‘Come up hither.’ And they went up to Heaven in a cloud, and their enemies saw them” (11:11,12).

‘And after three days and a half,’ is very particular, not three and a half days, but three days which means three days and three nights, and then a half of a day. Some have interpreted these days to mean ‘a short period of time,’ I do not agree with such an interpretation. If we notice the difference between the time Jesus was in the tomb, and the time here mentioned: “For as Jonah was in the whale’s belly three days, and three nights, so shall the Son of man be in the heart of the earth three days, and three nights” (*Mt 12:40*). These three days and three nights are calculated as follows: Jesus was laid in the Sepulchre on Friday afternoon, that makes one day. Saturday makes two days. He arose on Sunday, that makes three days. As to the nights, Friday night makes one night, Saturday makes two nights, and since the new day begins after midnight, that part of Sunday before dawn makes three nights. In calculating the extra half a day for the two witnesses, we will come to what would amount in modern day thinking almost another full day. Notice I said ‘almost’ for it will not be a full day, nor do we know at what time the three days and a half will begin.

The rejoicing of the wealthy and arrogant is short lived, because they have miscalculated three days and a half. The whole world will see the bodies of Enoch and Elijah (*on television for example*) arise and ascend into Heaven, *‘after three days and a half,’* because they have calculated according to their time, not according to God’s solar time. They do not know what is meant by *‘after.’*

What follows is the victory of God in visible form. The two faithful witnesses were given to prophesy for a thousand two hundred sixty days. Because of the world-wide attention, and the scoffing at the words of the faithful two, when the people see the two witnesses being called up to

Heaven, there is a great conversion to the Lord God Almighty. The Antichrist and the False Prophet are defeated and sent down to Hell (*Apoc 19:20*), and the Red Dragon, Satan himself has no more options but to completely expose himself, and therefore comes to destroy those who oppose him. Remember Jesus said: “There shall be then great tribulation, such as has not been from the beginning of the world until now, neither shall be. And unless those days had been shortened, no flesh should be saved, but for the sake of the elect those days shall be shortened” (*Mt 24:21,22*).

The worse part of the tribulation happens after the thousand two hundred sixty days. We read in the Prophet Daniel: “From the time when the continual sacrifice shall be taken away, and the abomination unto desolation shall be set up, there shall be a thousand two hundred ninety days (1,290). Blessed is he that waits, and comes unto a thousand three hundred thirty-five days {1,335}” (*Dn 12:11,12*). So we have here three different days, 1,260, 1,290, and 1,335. Why? Because the witnesses have prophesied 1,260 days, and after they are taken up in full view of the entire television world, there will be tremendous conversions to Christ Jesus. When a period of 30 days has elapsed (that is bringing us to 1,290), Satan himself will make his last horrible stand, for he knows that when he loses he goes down to Hell for all eternity.

Satan must appear as a real man. He will not appear in the caricature costumes we see in art and comic books, he comes then as a real man. It is my opinion that he will take the body of someone who has been in a coma for a long period of time, and then come out of it as ‘having been enlightened by the Almighty,’ Satan himself claiming to be the Almighty. It would be this type of a body which Satan will use, where all the medical records are verifiable.

When Saint John wrote: ‘*And I saw one of his heads as it were slain to death, and his death’s wound was healed...*’ If he had been ‘resurrected’ by the Devil, then a body which was in a coma would fit this description perfectly. No matter who the body is, he could not have ‘recovered’ or be brought back to life unless Jesus Christ had allow it! It is my opinion that this is the type body which Satan will occupy to complete his 45

days of terror before being cast into Hell for ever. The person must be the ‘Zionists and Masons man!’ Regardless of how Satan appears, he is defeated after the 45 days, bringing us to 1,335 days, that is to the end of evil.

That is why Jesus went on to say: “And immediately AFTER the tribulation of those days, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of heaven shall be moved” (*Mt 24:29*). The meaning is that the Church will be greatly persecuted like never before (*sun darkened*), the governments of the world are destroyed (*moon not give her light*), and the rulers of Freemasonry, Zionism, Communism, Islam, etc., will be utterly destroyed (*powers moved*).

“And at that hour there was made a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell. And there were slain in the earthquake, names of men, seven thousand, and the rest were cast into a fear and gave glory to the God of Heaven” (11:13).

This is the conversion as mentioned above. ‘*The tenth part*’ is the fulness of the destruction of the city of Babylon. We will see this further in chapter 17. The *seven thousand slain* is the perfect and complete (*seven*) destruction of all the rulers of darkness, ecclesiastical, political, financial and militarily. The *great earthquake* is not only that which was mentioned in the sixth seal (*Apoc 6:12; 16:18*), but also the elimination of the evil and tyranny which ruled the world who are now cast out - into hell. There is then a complete change of events to take place as we will now see.

“The second woe is past, and behold the third woe will come quickly” (11:14). Even worse events are still to come as we shall see in chapter 12, with the unfolding of Satan being excluded from his terror in the cosmos from which he is cast out, and now gives the full concentration of his demonic wrath upon the earth and its inhabitants.

“And the seventh angel sounded the trumpet: and there were great voices in heaven, saying: ‘The kingdom of this world is become our Lord’s and His Christ’s, and He shall reign for ever and ever. Amen.’”

And the four and twenty ancients who sit on their seats in the sight of God, fell on their faces and adored God, saying: 'We give Thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, Who art, and Who was, and Who are to come, because Thou have taken to Thee Thy great power, and Thou have reigned. And the nations were angry, and Thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that Thou should render reward to Thy servants the prophets, and the saints, and to them that fear Thy Name, little and great, and should destroy them who have corrupted the earth' (11:15-18).

When the seventh angel sounded the Trumpet, all of the Eucharistic Church (heaven), gave glory to God, because Satan is cast out of the heavens. It also alarmed the inhabitants on earth because the third woe has arrived on them.

'Thou have taken to Thee Thy great power, and Thou have reigned. And the nations were angry, and Thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that Thou should render reward to Thy servants the prophets, and the saints, and to them that fear Thy Name, little and great, and should destroy them who have corrupted the earth...' Now is God Victor! He gives to His Eucharistic people "...the voice of power" (Ps 67:34), and they execute all His designs. Let the nations be angry, for God now destroys their evil plans. The prophets and saints, and those who trusted in the Lord are now justified. In the opening of the fifth seal, the saints cried to the Lord: 'How long, O Lord (Holy and True), do Thou not judge and revenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?...And it was said to them that they should rest for a little time till their fellow servants and their brethren, who are to be slain even as they, should be filled up.' Now comes the promised vengeance of the Lord. We now see the gradual and steady progress of the defeat of Evil, and the victory of Good.

"And the Temple of God was opened in heaven, and the Ark of His Testament was seen in His Temple. And there were lightnings and voices and an earthquake and great hail" (11:19).

The Temple of God was opened in heaven is the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church (2Co 11:2) on earth, which is joined with Heaven. Here the great mystery is revealed for those who can accept it. The

prayer of the Lord: 'Thy Kingdom come...on earth as it is in Heaven' is now being fulfilled. What is this Kingdom? It is the unity of Heaven and earth in oneness in the Holy Trinity. It is exactly as we said above, Heaven joined with earth. Why can this be done now? Because now the few with faith have accepted all the promises of the Seven Sacraments, have become Eucharistic man, and have been given the power and the authority to stand steadfast in Christ Jesus, defeat the Devil, and open the gates to Paradise, the Tree of Life.

Jesus said: "For as lightning comes out of the east and appears even into the west, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be" (*Mt 24:27*). The illumination (*lightnings*) to the world by the prophets of God are seen and heard (*voices*), with great power (*hail*). This great hail is seen later when it is said: "The Temple of the Tabernacle of the Testimony in Heaven was opened" (*Apoc 15:5*), and no one was able to enter in until after the wrath of God was fulfilled. This is the time when those who remained up until now in disbelief will have their final chance to convert.

'*The Ark of His Testament was seen in His Temple,*' is the recovery of the Ark of the Covenant as written in Holy Scripture: "It was also contained in the same writing, how the prophet (*Jeremiah*), being warned by God, commanded that the Tabernacle and the Ark should accompany him, till he came forth to the mountain where Moses went up, and saw the inheritance of God {Mt Nebo} (*Dt 34:1*), and when Jeremiah came there he found a hollow cave and he carried in there the Tabernacle, and the Ark, and the Altar of Incense, and so stopped the door. Then some of them that followed him, came up to mark the place, but they could not find it, and when Jeremiah perceived it, he blamed (*chastised*) them, saying: The place shall be unknown, till God gather together the congregation of the people, and receive them to mercy. And then the Lord will show these things, and the majesty of the Lord shall appear, and there shall be a cloud as it was also showed to Moses, and He showed it when Solomon prayed that the place might be sanctified to the great God" (*2M 2:4-8*).

There are many who deny the existence and the place of the Ark, but we

have God's word for it. There are those who scoff that if it were true, God would have left it to Saint Peter and his successors. History has proven God's wisdom and knowledge in this matter. The truth is that God will give it to His chosen Petrus Romanus, Eucharistic man. After this, all is done.

The Eucharistic Reign of Christ is universal. Here is rejoicing! The events of time are ended, the new has begun, all things are made new (*Apoc 21:5,6*), but first there are corrections to be made and the completion of the seventh trumpet and the final march around the spiritual Jericho.

Chapter 12

The Woman clothed with the sun. The Red Dragon

“And a great sign appeared in Heaven: A woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and on her head a crown of twelve stars” (12:1).

Notice here that it is not a ‘vision’ but a ‘*sign*’! The woman is the Church, and in the spiritual sense it is also Our Blessed Lady, Mother of the Church, for she is the Mother of Jesus, Who is the Church (*Ep 5:23*). Therefore, the Church, clothed with Christ, the Light of the world (*the sun*), with the authority over the world (*the moon*) under her feet. This is to show that the Divine law of God is unchangeable, and that the ‘fresh air’ of the second John XXIII and his second Vatican Council agenda is to be disregarded as heresy. The government (*crown of twelve stars*) on her head, signifies that the Church is the only governing authority in the world, and that all nations must be subject to the Law of God. The ‘*sign*’ is that God is over all, as it is His universe, and the total authority over the world is in the hands of the Eucharistic Church. This is the ‘*sign*.’

As a side note, this *sign* was confirmed in an apparition at Tepayac, near Mexico City, from 9-12 December 1531. Our Blessed Mother, ‘clothed in the sun, with the moon under her feet,’ appeared to an Aztec called Juan Diego. At the last of four appearances, Our Lady sent Juan to the top of Tepayac hill, and there he found beautiful roses (in December). She arranged them in his tilma (cloak), and sent him to the Bishop, with a request that a Basilica be built there. When the Bishop saw the magnificent miraculous picture of our Lady in the tilma, he immediately consented to the Heavenly requests. The symbolism of the black moon under her feet, foretold that she would end the annual slaughter of 25,000 innocent human sacrifices offered by the ‘priests’ of the ruler Montezuma II, to the false god Quezelcoatl of the Aztecs. The slaughter was ended, which is a prophesy of that which was foretold to the Devil at the Garden of Eden: “...she shall crush your head...” (*Gn 3:15*). The name of the area was changed to ‘Guadalupe’ which in Spanish means ‘Brown Water’ but in the original Aztec means: “She will crush the serpent of stone.” This apparition changed the events in Mexico for ever.

It is estimated that between eight and ten million Mexicans came into the true faith and this offset the heresy of millions of Europeans who followed the heretic Luther and his revolution in the protesting apostasy.

“And being with child, she cried also travailing, and was in pain to be delivered” (12:2).

There are four parts to this:

being with child, the Church always is ‘with child,’ that is bringing souls from spiritual birth to maturity in Christ, that is to bring forth those who believe fully in Jesus Eucharist, and live His Seven Sacraments, to be born again, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

she cried, that is the Church always cries for the souls who live in great afflictions and persecutions under the unbelieving, and pagan regimes. The Church mourns seeing the unjust laws of corrupt governments who continue to deny the Ten Commandments and impose the rule of the devil on humanity, under the pretext of ‘religious freedom’ and separation of church and state.

also travailing. To ‘travail’ means ‘painful or laborious effort.’ The Church has always been in painful efforts resisting the devil and his minions, so what is prophetic when St. John saw this sign or event? He saw an extremely harsh period of time in the Church when it would appear that Satan was victorious. He saw that evil seemingly had taken over the helm of the Church, and that the Light of Christ was almost extinguished.

in pain to be delivered. This pain was seeing the small and insignificant people whom Jesus would choose to combat the error of Vatican II, as well as other heresies and schisms. He would see their resistance to come out and fight against those who proclaim that might is right.

However there is a strange word used here, ‘*also*.’ Why is this? Because we will see in the next chapter that the False Prophet imitated the fire of the two witnesses in the previous chapter, ‘so that he made *also* fire to come down from heaven unto the earth, in the sight of men’ (*Apoc 13:13*). The Antichrist ‘brought forth’ his ‘child,’ who is the False Prophet, so too here in imitation of God’s people, it is said that the False one made ‘*also*’ fire to come down from heaven. The antics of Pharaoh’s

magicians is copied here by the evil ones (*Ex 7:11*).

“And there was seen another sign in heaven. And behold a great red dragon, having seven heads, and ten horns, and on his heads seven diadems” (12:3).

This *sign* is of all places in the Church (*heaven*) on earth! He says ‘*behold*’ or ‘*observe*,’ like he was stunned at this sign. Here is the Devil (*red dragon*) having seven evil arch-demons (*seven heads*) who oppose the seven Archangels of God, and ten contradictory commandments (*ten horns*) opposing the Ten Commandments of God, and with his power through the means of communication, to lead all of humanity to disobey the Ten Commandments of God. (The *horn* has always been an instrument of amplification, a way of making one’s voice better heard, a strong means of communication - evil government through Zionist/Masonic authority, controls the media).

As we look further we see that the seven heads, upon each of which there is a crown (*diadem*), are signs of authority and royalty. This power and authority are the weapons of the seven kings which we will see in chapter 17, who have established rules of force for their ideological, political, and military power, which uses wars (*red*), torture, cruelty, and blood, as instruments of their terrorist supremacy.

“And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven and cast them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman who was ready to be delivered, that, when she should be delivered, he might devour her son” (12:4).

His *tail* conquered a great number of the angels of God, “...who kept not their principality but forsook their own habitation...” (*Jude 1:6*). The number is also all the bishops (*angels*) who followed Luther and established their own ‘golden calves’ with their contrary national churches, religions, and multiplicity of errors, as they catered to their own sinful pride, and ego. These are the multiplication of ‘christian’ churches who have led so many astray with their false teachings and contrary bibles. The bishops are also all those who have endorsed the heresies and schisms of Vatican II. All these has Satan conquered.

'And the dragon stood before the woman' meaning that he did not have many churches to stand before, because he had led the thousands of false churches into error, leaving him only one Church to stand before, and that was the original Roman Catholic Church. Until the time of the apostasy of the Roman church in Second Vatican Council (1962-65), Satan was on guard, and seeking to destroy every one therein. But God protected His Church, for the gates of Hell cannot prevail against it, and so He saved a small remnant out of the errors of Vatican II, kept them safe in *'the wilderness'* until the appointed time for their coming forth in public view. This 'remnant' is the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church which is not contaminated with the 'ecumenical' error.

'That he might devour her son' that is to capture Petrus Romanus the Great Monarch, and the faithful remnant with lures of the worldly living, or kill him and all the remnant.

"And she (the Church) brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with an iron rod. And her son was taken up to God and to his Throne" (12:5).

Most people take *'her son'* to be Jesus. This is simply not so. The Apocalypse is a prophesy of events which have yet to happen. Some commentators have taken it for some great Pope elected in the normal events of a Conclave, again not so. They have it almost right. This *'man child,'* is Petrus Romanus, Eucharistic man, the Great Monarch, Authority of Christ, the last 'pope' to reign on the earth until the end of time. This *'man child'* has become one in Jesus as we saw before, and the gates of Hell shall not prevail against the Church, because in Eucharistic man, the new creature, there is no sin, and there can be no sin, as it is written: "Whosoever is born of God commits not sin, for His seed abides in him, and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. In this the children of God are manifest" (1Jn 3:9,10).

'Who was to rule all nations with an iron rod,' is the total authority from and in God to bring all creation into Paradise, the new Garden of Eden, the Eucharistic Church.

In being *'taken up to God and to His Throne,'* Eucharistic man is taken 'up' into the heart of Christ Jesus, and is set down with Him in His

Throne in Eucharistic unity, as we saw earlier (*Apoc 3:21*). But this is only part of the ‘sign.’ In being ‘taken up to God and to His Throne,’ Petrus Romanus in the capacity of the Great Monarch is instructed in Kingdom Authority, spiritual warfare, Kingdom living, and Kingdom rule (*iron rod*). This ‘*taken up*’ is being sealed with Divine honor and priestly sovereignty, in order to draw into the Church the scattered flocks out of all the nations, so that there shall be: “One Lord, one faith, one baptism. One God and Father of all, Who is above all, and through all, and in us all” (*Ep 4:5,6*). There was also an actual taking up of the ‘*man child*’ to God and to His Throne which happened in 1998. I am aware of this event.

“And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she had a place prepared of God, that there they should feed her, a thousand two hundred sixty days” (12:6).

The Church separated herself from the errors of the supposedly professed ‘christians,’ and held herself in hiddenness (*wilderness*). This is why it is stated that it is ‘*a place prepared of God*’ meaning that it is totally under God’s protection and guidance in His Eucharistic man, His new creation. We find absent in this ‘wilderness’ the errors, blasphemy, and sacrileges, of so-called professed ‘christians,’ where Eucharistic man instructs (*feeds*) and protects the remnant Church. It must be noted that all faithful people shall know and follow Her. This wilderness is outside ‘worldliness’ and is not caught up in the anti-Catholic, anti-Christian movement, and to a certain degree allow the Eucharistic Church freedom of movement, although it will be monitored by Zionist/Masonic satanic satellite surveillance.

‘*a thousand two hundred sixty days*’ in spiritual numbers may mean: *A thousand* means an immense number, so we are looking at spanning more than a millennium.

Two hundred being twice ‘plenitude,’ or in this case two centuries, bringing us from one century and as it has happened from one millennium to another.

Sixty is the combination of 6 and 10, and here would mean completion in worldly Godless sense *6 iniquity*, and *10* the fulness of man’s order.

“And there was a great battle in heaven: Michael and his angels fought with the dragon, and the dragon fought, and his angels. And they prevailed not, neither was their place found any more in heaven. And that great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, who is called the Devil and Satan, who seduces the whole world. And he was cast into the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him” (12:7-9).

The Devil was cast out of Heaven in the beginning when he revolted from God. That was his first casting out. We saw that when God held court outside the Gates of Heaven as it is written: “Now on a certain day, when the sons of God came to stand before the Lord, Satan also was present among them. And the Lord said to him: ‘Whence come you?’ And he answered and said: ‘I have gone round about the earth, and walked through it’” (*Jb 1:6,7*).

The second casting out of Satan is here in the Apocalypse, verses 12:7-9, where he is cast out of the Church, and into the ‘*earth*,’ meaning the same ‘*earth*’ as the false prophet of 13:11. The Devil being ‘*cast into the earth*’ means that he has his wings clipped, and cannot enter nor even destroy the Church any more. He has no more power to ascend into the Eucharistic Church (*heaven*). Also relating to this ‘*battle in heaven*’ is that what we see on earth with wars and battles, is a reflection of what is going on in the heavens (*cosmos*) in the wars between the good and bad angels.

There is yet the third casting out when he is put into Hell for all eternity (*Apoc 20:9,10*).

“And I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying: ‘Now is there made salvation, and power, and the Kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ, because the accuser of our brethren is cast forth, who accused them before our God day and night” (12:10).

Eucharistic man has declared that the Church is free from Satan and all his minions for they are expelled, excommunicated, (including those priests, bishops, archbishops, cardinals, popes, ordained in the post Vatican II era). Of those who are ‘expelled,’ a great number will seek and be admitted into the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church after they have been instructed in Eucharistedness. The Church is now secured

against the errors and darkness of the false prophets who were under the direction of evil. The heresies of the Vatican II, and Protestant, and Orthodox, and Coptic ‘christians’ is exposed and ‘*cast forth*,’ that is they are cast out, excommunicated.

“And they overcame him by the Blood of the Lamb, and by the word of the Testimony, and they loved not their lives unto death” (12:11).

The devil and false religions are defeated by Life in the Seven Sacraments, Life in Jesus Eucharist, Body, Blood, Soul and Divinity, His Real Presence. The members of the Eucharistic Church are willing to fight unto death rather than be subject to the errors of the Zionist/Masonic/Communist and Islamic evils.

“Therefore, rejoice, O heavens, and you that dwell therein ” (12:12a).

The Church and all the parishes (*heavens*) shout (*loud voice*) for joy and praise God for the victory over the Devil, and his being cast out of the Church. The only place the Devil can go is lower, and we will see that shortly! The children of God have stood firm, thus allowing God to be able to say to His children who persevered and believed, and trusted in the Blood of the Lamb: “Well done, good and faithful servant, because you have been faithful over a few things, I will place you over many things. Enter you into the joy of Thy Lord” (*Mt 25:21*).

“Woe to the earth and to the sea, because the Devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, knowing that he has but a short time” (12:12b).

We saw in the previous chapter that the Devil takes over rulership of the world after the Antichrist and the False Prophet are defeated. He has a ‘*short time*,’ to rule, short but deadly, that is for the 45 day period after day 1290 until day 1335, his final defeat. This is his horrible reign of terror. The word ‘*unto*’ indicates that he has a very definite and aggressive threatening purpose, which is to conquer the whole earth and subdue all people to himself, and bring the entire population to Hell.

Here now is the third of the three woes: ‘*because the Devil is come down unto the earth and the sea, having great wrath, knowing that he has but a short time.*’

When it is written: *'the earth and the sea,'* note here the prophetic reference to 13:11 and 13:1. In 13:11, the False prophet comes up out of the earth, and the Antichrist comes up out of the sea, 13:1. These two systems, political and ecclesiastical are the last areas from which the devil can operate in God's creation. The ecclesiastical and political (*sea and earth*) leaders have prepared the anti-Christ laws and systems for the final assault against the Church of God which is the Government of God. We may take it here to mean that the Church will be attacked viciously and those who remain constant in the Ten Commandments and the Seven Sacraments will be victorious. Those who see the errors of the United Nations and all 'world' governments will know to flee from the fatal errors of the Anti-Christ rulers. We will see this in more detail in 12:15 and 17, and especially in chapter 13.

"And when the dragon saw that he was cast into the earth, he persecuted the Woman who brought forth the man child" (12:13).

The Eucharistic Church, children of God, find their protection in the Seven Sacraments. They cannot be hurt by Satan because they are Eucharistic man. The devil at this point being *'cast into the earth'* knows that his dominion and authority given to him by God before the creation of man, is now being taken back from him by faithful and constant Eucharistic man, through the Blood of Jesus Christ. The defeat of the devil by lowly man, is his greatest humiliation before being cast into hell for all eternity.

"And there were given to the woman two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the desert, unto her place, where she is nourished for a time and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent" (12:14).

The *'great eagle,'* is a Eucharistic man, and also the particular man, Petrus Romanus in his capacity as *Great Monarch,* and we will deal more with this in 14:14.

'There were given to the woman two wings of a great eagle,' that is The Church (*the woman*), rises above the attacks of the evil one, trusting in Love and Faith; Justice and Truth (*two wings*), in her place outside the influences of sin and evil. The Church is in a place which is outside the 'luxuries' and the allurements of the materialistic world (*desert*) controlled by the Zionist/Masonic/Communist/Islamic evil.

She is *nourished* for a period of time. Some take this for the period of three and a half years, and that is a possibility, but I seriously doubt it. I have two thoughts here.

First (my preference). '*A time and times, and half a time*' refers to the advent of second John XXIII and his calling the Second Vatican Council to promulgate the errors and heresies he had in mind. The period of his pontificate is '*a time*.' Then comes '*times*' which is the four popes which followed him spreading and endorsing the errors of the '*time*.' Finally comes the '*half a time*' when the man called Francis brings the once Holy Roman Church to an unfathomable depth of error and heresies.

Second. I also take it for a period of a time when evil is establishing it's final strangle-hold on the world in the last days (*a time*), and for the period of times (*times*) when the nations of the world set their armies in order to 'protect their countries from the other guys' (*Mt 24:6,7*), and finally when the nations openly war at each other in World War III (*half a time*). I should say here that WWII did start in the year 2000, but at that time it was more scattered or localized through terrorist and civil wars in different parts of the world. The major antagonists waged war by proxy as for example in Syria. The full scale total confrontation including every nation under the sun has yet to take place, but the nations are being gathered together, alignments are being made, old enemies are joining together to fight the 'other enemy.' This expansion is already at work, and will shortly come to pass, and we will see how the 'alliances' form and come together in the next chapter.

"And the serpent cast out of his mouth, after the woman, water, as it were a river, that he might cause her to be carried away by the river" (12:15).

The Devil uses his antichrists to rant and rave (*water as a river*) against the Eucharistic Church. He uses television, radio, magazines, billboards, and every means of public media, to solidify his 'liberalism' and convenient message of 'if it feels right do it,' and 'you must satisfy yourself' and 'instant gratification' in all things. The antichrists, that is the union of Communism, Freemasonry, Zionism, Islam, and Ecclesiastical Zionist/Masonry, deny the power of God to 'do a new thing,' and condemn the Church (Eucharistic man), because it is not under the 'umbrella of carnal man,' (Judaism, Islam, Coptic, Protestant,

Orthodox, post Vatican II Roman church, or other ‘churches’ in error), hoping to destroy the Eucharistic Church.

“And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth and swallowed up the river which the dragon cast out of his mouth” (12:16). Because of the expansion of World War III, the interest will be temporarily lost in pursuing the destruction of the Church. *‘The earth opened her mouth and swallowed up the river which the dragon cast out of his mouth,’* means that the Church turned off the ‘press and other media’ and so be outside the influences of the command that all people ‘should make the image of the beast,’ which we will see in greater detail in 13:14. The Church will in no way be under any influences of the evil one.

“And the dragon was angry against the woman, and went to make war with the rest of her seed, who keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ” (12:17).

After the two witnesses are resurrected, and conversions are made to the Eucharistic Church, the Devil, {remember that the Antichrist and the False Prophet are already in Hell} (*Apoc 19:20*), makes war against the timid ‘Christian’ who will know that there is grave error being promoted, and so they will leave their comfortable places and ‘convert’ during that time. The *seed* of truth has been planted in them, and these are the *rest* against whom the devil *makes war*. These converts will be those who see and decide to keep the Ten Commandments, as well as the Seven Sacraments of the Church.

We saw in 6:9-11, that when the fifth seal was opened, *‘under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God and for the testimony which they held...And it was said to them that they should rest for a little time till their fellow servants and their brethren, who are to be slain even as they, should be filled up.’* The majority of those to be slain will come in this final persecution during the Great Tribulation. These slain are those who during the deepest part of the Tribulation will see the truth of Almighty God and so abandon the errors of Antichrist and False Prophet, and come home to Truth.

“And he stood upon the sand of the sea” (12:18).

Satan has built his evil house on the materialistic nations of Zionism, Freemasonry, Communism and Islam, *the sand of the sea*, which is being defeated, that is he does not have a firm footing: “And every one that hears these My words and does them not, shall be like a foolish man that built his house upon the sand, and the rain fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and they beat upon that house, and it fell, and great was the fall thereof” (*Mt 7:26,27*).

Satan’s defeat is imminent!

Chapter 13

The Antichrist and the False Prophet

The Antichrist

“And I saw a beast coming up out the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns, ten diadems, and upon his heads, names of blasphemy” (13:1).

‘And I saw a beast coming up out the sea’: The ‘sea’ is a spiritual term which is sometimes used to denote ‘many nations,’ and in this case it means the nations of the world.

‘having seven heads’: ‘Seven’ has a spiritual meaning ‘complete,’ so that this beast has complete headship or supremacy over the whole world.

‘and ten horns’: The horn, as we said before is a means of commanding, and also is an instrument of amplification, a way of making one’s voice heard, and a powerful means of communication, like news print, radio, TV, and internet. The ‘ten’ here means ‘fulness in a Godless sense,’ and so the beast has complete and full control to make his laws and commands to be heard, and obeyed, throughout the entire world.

‘and upon his horns, ten diadems’: A ‘diadem’ is a crown of authority, and in this case full authority, and here we see that the ‘beast’ with the laws, edicts, and commandments to oppose the Ten Commandments of God, and with his power through the means of communication, orders all of humanity to disobey the Ten Commandments of God, and therefore obey the commandments of the Devil. Typical of these laws are ‘abortion rights,’ and ‘homosexual rights,’ and ‘atheist rights in education,’ ‘civil liberties,’ laws against Christians displaying Christmas scenes and statues in public view, and many other such prohibitions against Jesus Christ.

‘and upon his heads, names of blasphemy’: Complete headship or supremacy over the whole world is given to the rulers to violate the word of God, and oppose the seven cardinal virtues of Faith, Hope, Charity, Prudence, Fortitude, Justice and Temperance, with the seven deadly sins of Pride, Lust, Greed, Anger, Sloth, Envy, and Gluttony.

In summary: The Antichrist is the beast coming up out of many nations (*the sea*), is the political leader appointed by the Devil (*the red dragon*)

to set up his diabolical Zionist kingdom of hatred and violence in the world, to bring all humanity into subjection to his evil works. This diabolical man is now in the world (*as of 2019*), and will soon make his ascent to the control room of evil.

Through the power given him, by use of legalisms, money, war, sabotage, famine, and all acts of terrorism, he leads the world into the Great Tribulation.

In order to identify this beast, we must look at:

- a). Who in the world today control all the elements of money, political appointments, at each national level, as well as in globalist institutions?
- b). Who controls what people will hear on radio, see on television, or read in national papers or internet?
- c). Who really in the world has the power to enforce the denial of Christ, and prosecute those who oppose the Satanic cult?

The answer is simple - Israel of the Israelis, not Israelites. “For all are not Israelites that are of Israel. Neither are all they that are the seed of Abraham, children, but in Isaac shall your seed be called” (*Rm 9:6,7*).

“And the beast which I saw was like to a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion. And the dragon gave him his own strength and great power” (13:2).

The *leopard* crouches in hiddenness, ready to pounce at the most opportune time for him, with powerful ability to pull apart like a *bear*, and with the roar of his ‘*lion*’ voice, to strike fear into all who oppose him, thus destroying all his enemies.

The ‘*dragon*’ is Satan himself as we saw in *12:3*.

This ‘*leopard*’ is the secret societies of Zionism, Freemasonry, Communism and Islam. Zionism is the financial arm of the Devil’s machinations, Masonry is the political arm, and Communism is the experimental system for total world domination. Control of the media of the world is the ‘*voice*’ and the ‘*horn*’ is the reins of absolute control. If Freemasonry does that which is contrary to the Zionists, then the economics of money is withheld, and conversely, if the Zionists do

something contrary to the Masons, then the political manipulation is withheld. If you look at the politicians throughout the world today, you will see them promise everything to get elected, then when in office, they forget their pledge to help the poor and underprivileged, as they support governments who abuse the basic human rights of their citizens. *'the feet of a bear'* because he goes without fear into the territories and possessions of other people, claiming all for himself. *'the mouth of a lion'* because he strikes fear into his enemies.

Zionism/Masonry/Communism in all their forms is the deadly combination and the most important tool and weapon of Satan. Who best describes this leopard, bear and lion? Who sits in the background commanding all leaders to obey their money? The Israeli Zionist lobby in every country of the world.

"And I saw one of his heads as it were slain to death, and his death's wound was healed, and all the earth was in admiration after the beast"(13:3).

As a nation, Israel was conquered by the Romans, and cast out of their lands in 70 A.D. It is interesting to note that about 160 B.C. the Jews made a covenant with the Romans and invited them to be their allies. This is even after God, through the Maccabees, had delivered the Jews many times from the hands of their enemies: "Judas Machabeus...sent...to Rome to make a league of amity and confederacy with them...and said: '...people of the Jews, have sent us to you to make alliance and peace with you, and that we may be registered your confederates and friends. And this is the copy of the writing that the Romans wrote ...GOOD SUCCESS BE TO THE ROMANS, and to the people of the Jews by sea, and by land, for ever: and far be the sword and enemy from them...According to these articles did the Romans covenant with the people of the Jews'" (*1M 8:17-29*). Eventually the Romans enforced their tyrannical rule over Israel. And if the name of blasphemy should be attributed to this nation of Israelis, it was the High Priest Caiphas who claimed that it was better for one man (*Jesus Christ*) to die for the people than the whole nation perish (*Jn 11:49,50*).

Further examples of this Jewish conspiracy within their ranks are

recorded in Holy Scripture, for example ‘wicked and ungodly men of Israel,’ like Alcimus accused Machabeus and the Jewish people to the king Antiochus so that Alcimus was made high priest, and commanded to take revenge upon the children of Israel. Later, this same Alcimus incensed king Demetrius against Judas Machabeus who brought a great army to fight against the few faithful Israelites (*1M 7:5-9; 2M14-13*). Again, Menelaus bought the high priesthood and stole certain vessels of gold out of the temple, giving them as a gift for his high priesthood (*2M 4:23-34*).

Today their political backbiting and intrigue is the same as it was at the time of Jesus. It is my contention that with their control over world affairs, and especially the software used in the internet and other technology, where they supply sensitive software used in IP addresses, they have power over nearly all stations of the world. Israel manufactures the majority of the hardware for communication systems such as Muxs, microwave communication systems, hardware or pathways to enter into the world networks. Nearly every communication microwave is manufactured in Israel. Israel can intercept almost all communications everywhere in the world. Every communication system in the world has a capacity for use in every type of warfare. They are the leading developer and manufacturer of drones for surveillance and destruction.

Who can fight with the beast? Today, Israel is the 3rd largest nation with stockpiles of nuclear weapons, behind the USA (12,000), Russia (4,650), and finally Israel with an estimated 400+ weapons. Since the USA citizens pay taxes to Israel (through excessive ‘foreign aid’), then it would be fair to say that the USA’s weapons of mass destruction are for the benefit of Israel.

The nation which crucified Christ, ‘died’ themselves, and now are the kingmakers of the world. The beast which was dead, is alive and thriving, *‘his death’s wound was healed, and all the earth was in admiration after the beast.’*

The control of the Antichrist as a person begins to come into view, so

then let's look for the 'man,' the Antichrist, and his origins. He is a politician. He is a Jew, or of Jewish origin. He will sell his soul for pride and power. He will seek the seat of Satan as we saw in 2:13. Let us look at what Scripture says of this type of man.

When Jacob (*whose name was changed to Israel by the Lord*) was dying, he prophesied over his twelve sons. Of Dan he said: "Dan shall judge his people like another tribe in Israel. Let Dan be a snake in the way, a serpent in the path, that bites the horse's heels, that his rider may fall backward. I will look for Thy salvation, O Lord" (*Gn 49:16-18*).

This is a strange verse. Consider the part where he says: *Dan shall judge his people like another tribe in Israel*, which in fact it did through Samson who was a Danite. *Let Dan be a snake in the way, a serpent in the path, that bites the horse's heels, that his rider may fall backward*, I have included a picture of the 'Bronze Horse' in St. Petersburg, Russia, to illustrate this part of the verse. The rider is looking westward, so that he may go and conquer, but see the snake at the horse's heels, how trusting and unsuspecting are the people to allow the snake entry to their path!



In the Apocalypse it is written: "And I heard the number of them that were signed, an hundred forty-four thousand were signed, of every tribe of the children of Israel" (*Apoc 7:4*), except in the naming of the tribes, Dan is omitted! Why? Because the Antichrist is from this tribe of Israel. Obviously the Israeli Zionist Jews will follow an Israeli Jew even though they know he is the Antichrist. Jesus Himself said: "I am come in the Name of My Father, and you receive Me not, if another shall come in his own name, him you will receive...Think not that I will accuse you to the

Father. There is one that accuses you, Moses, in whom you trust” (Jn 5:43,45).

“and they adored the dragon which gave power to the beast, and they adored the beast, saying: ‘Who is like to the beast, and who shall be able to fight with him?’”(13:4).

Devil worship is not uncommon and is growing in alarming numbers around the world, being promoted by the Zionist controlled movies industry and internet. Recruits are increasing and covens of witchcraft may be found in practically every town in the world. These witches and devil worshipers meet regularly to *‘adore the beast,’* so it is easy to see this satanic control, and the promoters of filth whose god is money.

There is an excellent article entitled *The Truth About the Talmud*, by Michael A. Hoffman, in which he states that:

“The Israeli ‘Star of David,’ is actually nothing of the kind, but rather an occult hexagram, a yantra of the androgyne, which became associated with the Khazars in 14th century Bohemia. (The misnamed “state of Israel” was founded in 1948 in an alliance between Jewish Communists and atheistic Zionists, with crucial U.N. recognition provided by Soviet Communist dictator Joseph Stalin whose second wife was Jewish!).” I will deal with the ‘Star of David’ in the section addressing the 666.

(I insert here the definitions of yantra and androgyne for clarification.

*A **yantra** is a visual mantra, a symbol or icon, particularly of a devil or goddess in geometric form.*

***Androgyne** is a person who desires or thinks they have a gender which is simultaneously feminine and masculine, although not necessarily in equal amounts).*

Here are some of the points of Mr. Hoffman which pertain to the Zionist kingdom of the Antichrist:

1. Hitting a Jew is the same as hitting God.
2. If a heathen (Gentile) hits a Jew, the Gentile must be killed.
3. A Jew need not pay a Gentile the wages owed him for work.
4. When a Jew murders a Gentile, there will be no death penalty.
5. What a Jew steals from a Gentile he may keep.

6. Jews may use lies (“subterfuges”) to circumvent a Gentile.
7. The USA government under Presidents Reagan, Bush and Clinton, has provided, under the euphemism of education (for example, House Joint Resolution 173 and Public Law 102-14), a groundwork for the establishment of Talmudic “courts of justice” to be administered by disciples of Shneur Zalman’s Chabad successor, Rabbi Menachem Mendel Schneerson. Maimonides ruled that it is a Jewish court - or a court appointed by Jewish authority - that enforces obedience and passes judgment on Gentiles, as well as promulgating *legislation by court order* for that purpose. Any non-Jewish nation “not subject to our jurisdiction” will be the target of Jewish holy war.
8. American taxpayers’ subsidy of the so-called “U.S. Holocaust Museum” in Washington, D.C., excludes any reference to holocausts perpetrated by Jewish Communists against Christians in Russia and Eastern Europe, from 1917 onward.

“And there was given to him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies, and power was given to him to do, two and forty months” (13:5).

There are four separate points here.

First. The Roman Empire was destroyed as we all know. In absolute hatred against the Catholic Church, the Common Market (known originally as the Nations of Six - notice the use of ‘6’), announced to the world ‘The Treaty of Rome,’ which for them was the formation of the new Roman Empire. They chose the 25th March, 1958 to announce their declaration to the world of their proposed system of political and economic salvation, from the city of the headquarters of the Church. **(The 25th March is the Feast of the Annunciation by the Archangel Gabriel to Our Lady of the birth of the Messiah which would come 9 months later on 25th December).** The original signatures were the 6 nations of: Italy, Germany, France, Belgium, Luxembourg, and The Netherlands (*Holland*). In 1962 it became known as The European Economic Community, the EEC. Ireland, Denmark and Britain joined in January 1973, followed by Greece in January 1981, and then by Portugal and Spain in January 1986, and gradually growing to 27 member states by January 2007. Later the name was changed to it’s current title, The

European Union (EU). The death blow dealt to the old Empire is now healed with the new and extremely powerful EU Empire. Let me warn you that this Antichrist union, the revived Roman Empire, is a decoy for the beast like a leopard, which is Zionism, the Satanic kingdom of Zion.

Second. The world suffered a great depression in 1932, and through Zionist financial manipulations, it recovered to rise to the dizzy heights of ‘prosperity’ for the rich nations, and abject poverty for the poor in many nations, including all the ‘third world’ countries.

Third. World Zionist institutions like The World Bank, International Monetary Fund, United Nations, World Council of Churches, etc., gradually took control of the planet, so that individual countries sold their sovereignty, their birth-right, their inheritance, for a bowl of stew (*Gn 25:33*). They wanted to be part of the great economic prosperity at any cost! *‘Who is like to the beast? And who shall be able to fight with him?’*

Fourth. When the full compliment of nations are entered into this EU, as well as similar ‘unities’ such as the Organization of American States, (OAS), and ‘The Unholy Alliance,’ (which I will deal with more fully in chapter 17), then Satan will have his total control over the world. The World Bank, International Monetary Fund, United Nations and the World Council of Churches are controlled and staffed by Freemasons and Zionists.

When this control is absolute, then the Antichrist has the *mouth to speak great things, and blasphemies*, and use his ‘legally,’ established, absolute power which he has from Satan, to exercise for two and forty months.

“And he opened his mouth unto blasphemies against God, to blaspheme His Name, and His Tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven” (13:6). Throughout the world today, we hear Antichrist blasphemies on TV, in movies, in public assemblies, and in government agencies. In co-operation with the False Prophet whom we will deal with next, condemnation is made of religious assemblies, particularly ‘Christians,’ and more particularly against ‘Catholics.’ This term ‘Catholic’ is important, for it is from the original ‘Eternal Virgin Eucharistic (*catholic*) Church,’ not the new Vatican II ‘Roman Catholic Church,’

that the defeat of Satan and all his minions will come.

Again I reiterate that Eucharistic man is the fulfilment of Christianity, just as Christianity was the fulfilment of Judaism, and in the fulfilling of the Seven Sacraments, Eucharistic man receives the very fulness of God, and God dwells in him, and has His Tabernacle in him and with him, as we saw earlier. This is *'the Revelation of Jesus Christ'* as was referred to in the first five words of the Apocalypse 1:1. It must be stated here that in the parable of the sower, Judaism is the thirty fold; Christianity is the sixty fold; and Eucharistedness is the one hundred fold (*Mt 13:8*).

It is in Eucharistic man that the prayer of Jesus is fulfilled, "Father, Thy Kingdom come...on earth, as it is in Heaven." Why else would the Antichrist open *'his mouth unto blasphemies against God, to blaspheme His Name, and His Tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven'*?

Consider for a moment your concept of Heaven. You rightly think that it is 'up there' somewhere! After all, Jesus ascended into Heaven (*Lk 24:51*), and it also says: "No man has ascended into Heaven, but He that descended from Heaven, the Son of man who is in Heaven" (*Jn 3:13*). If Heaven is 'up there,' then what good would it do to blaspheme *'them that dwell in heaven'*? Why would they blaspheme *His Name*, if His Name were up in Heaven? Why would they blaspheme *His Tabernacle* if it were in Heaven, 'up there'? The answer is very simple, and taken on faith, and in faith, Eucharistic man is on earth, terra firma, with the promised completeness of the Resurrection of Jesus Christ, for Heaven is now joined to earth in the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church. This *'heaven'* is the Eucharistic Church which defeats Satan.

"And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them. And power was given him over every tribe, and people, and tongue, and nation" (13:7).

There are four sets of saints which we must mention here.

The first is obviously the saints in Heaven, and since they are there, they cannot be *'overcome.'*

The second set is in Purgatory, the Church Suffering, and they cannot be *'overcome,'* and they will all go to Heaven at their appointed time. The third and fourth sets of saints are here on earth.

The 'third set' are those who are Eucharisted and they cannot be overcome, because Jesus is living in them.

Then there is the 'fourth set,' those who will see the error of the False Prophet, the Antichrist and his cohorts, and seek to leave the world 'church' assemblies to follow Jesus in truth. It is against these saints that the '*dragon*' will *wage war* continuously.

The power of the evil one will be '*over every tribe, and people, and tongue, and nation,*' and there are no exceptions except as stated above. But his power does not prevent the true conversion to Jesus of those who pray for the fortitude to trust and believe the victory of Christ over evil.

Since Zionism, Islam and Freemasonry are the enemies of Christ, the Communists are right there with them, and they serve a very effective cooperative purpose of evil government control. Mikhail Gorbachev on 15 December 1987 said to communist party officials, cadres and Soviet military personnel: "There must be no letup in the war against religion because as long as religion exists Communism cannot prevail. We must intensify the obliteration of all religions wherever they are being practiced or taught." This is the Zionist/Masonic/Communist troika of hatred and destruction.

"And all that dwell upon the earth adored him, whose names are not written in the Book of Life of the Lamb, Which was slain from the beginning of the world" (13:8).

Those adoring the Antichrist are people 'in the world, and of the world,' those who seek the temporal comforts of worldly things, and reject any idea of God as a consuming fire (*Dt 4:24; Hb 12:29*). They reject *the Lamb that was slain* in Genesis as a prophecy of Jesus (*Gn 3:21*), and of course the Lamb proclaimed by John the Baptist: "Behold the Lamb of God. Behold Him who takes away the sin of the world" (*Jn 1:29*).

Knowing that Jesus Christ, Son of God, would come and deliver man, both rational and irrational from the domination of Satan, the evil one has seduced arrogant man to follow him.

"If any man have an ear, let him hear. He that shall lead into captivity shall go into captivity, he that shall kill by the sword must be killed by the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints" (13:9,10).

This message which I now write to you will be broadcast to the whole world, via television, radio, internet and it's various channels, thus foretelling *'let him hear.'* The political, financial, scholastic, and religious leaders, who lead the citizens down the primrose path will be killed by the sword of the Word of God, and go to Hell. The saints of Almighty God know this, and in their patience they know that it is coming.

The False Prophet - the false religion. Before we deal with verse 13:11, let us look at what to expect in the False Prophet.

The False Prophet is the combination of Ecclesiastical Freemasonry and Ecclesiastical Zionism and Communism. The Masons and Zionists have infiltrated every church in the world, no exceptions. There are Zionist Cardinals and Masonic Cardinals in the Vatican. Protestants were the founders of Freemasonry in England in 1717, and so it is not surprising that Zionism and Masonry would have a home in those 'churches' who promoted them.

The False Prophet is controlled by the money of Zionism, the political power of Freemasonry, and the Godless state of Communism. Together with his ecclesiastical power, and using the UN laws and the World Council of Churches, he promotes ecumenical 'religious tolerance' to further his own agenda. The persuasive power of the False Prophet, and the economic, military and terrorist forces of the Antichrist behind him, make it so that all who do not obey him will be annihilated. He controls the power to persuade people to accept the 'swastika of the end times' which is the mark of the beast, in order to be able to work, to earn money, to buy food and essentials. This is not the micro-chip so widely touted, but an even more sinister approach, the mobile phone. It is the era of the invisible government of money, it is the plastic 'cashless society' revolution.

The laws of the EU have promoted the elimination of political borders between member nations, as well as a common currency. Sounds great! Yes? No! Enter the cunning promotion of ecumenical 'religious tolerance' in which all member states must protect the rights of all citizens. These rights include free passage of citizens from one state to

another. French citizens from Muslim nations now have legal entry into the EU, and the laws and religion of Islam must be protected. Islam is totally anti - Christ, and so public religious statues, and Christian feast days like Christmas are all under attack by the Islam citizens and this is legal! It goes on and on in favor of Zionism, Freemasonry, Communism and the cunning manipulation of militant Islam.

The False Prophet of ecclesiastical ecumenism disregards what God said: “Man shall not be strengthened by wickedness, and the root of the just shall not be moved” (*Pr 12:3*). The False Prophet will initially seem to honor all monotheistic religions, and have them on a par with each other, making Christianity, Judaism, and Islam the same, claiming that all are good. Initially he will discourage Christians from seeking to bring non-believers to the Truth. He will say that all people can go to Heaven and need not believe in Jesus Christ. Eventually he will forbid proselytizing and particularly from ‘going and teaching all nations, baptizing them...’ (*Mt 28:19*). He will not proclaim that Jesus Christ is the Messiah, Eucharist, King of All Nations. He will be politically skillful in placating the religion from whence Truth comes, by certifying as dogma some facts to keep the ‘flock’ faithful to him, while at the same time silently and unobtrusively compromising basic truths. When truth is compromised, it is no longer truth, but heresy. These are some of the traits to watch for in the False Prophet.

Understand some of the forces at work to make way for the False Prophet. The ‘man’ imagined, ‘man’ conceived, ‘man’ made, World Council of Churches was formed in Amsterdam in 1948, the same year in which Israel ‘gained’ sovereignty! Through the World Council of Churches, the False Prophet will attempt to abolish the Name of Jesus Christ, which is the original Roman Catholic Church, and will make it illegal and punishable by death for anyone to belong to, or practice the faith of Christ. Already the United Nations on 25 November 1981 have declared their power over religion. The United Nations General Assembly adopted without vote, decision 36/412, the “Declaration on the Elimination of All Forms of Intolerance and of Discrimination Based on Religion or Belief.” It is interesting to note that “Iran said the United Nations was a secular body, and secular bodies were not qualified to

deal with religious matters: Iran accepted the Declaration saying that it was in “Total conformity with Islamic Jurisprudence” (*UN Yearbook, 1981. p 881*). This Iranian Moslem condemnation and endorsement alone should alert all of professed ‘Christendom’ to be aware of the deadly peril contained in this rather subtle and seemingly innocuous “Declaration.” Be aware of the powers granted to the United Nations, and endorsed by the political leaders of the world.

Here again I include some points which Mr. Hoffman states which pertain to the False Prophet:

1. The Gentiles are outside the protection of the law and God has “exposed their money to Israel.”
2. Any scrutiny of Jewish holy books by Christian investigators is characterized as a “tyrannical proceeding.”
3. Under the Talmud’s counterfeit Noahide Laws, the worship of Jesus is forbidden under penalty of death, since such worship of Christ is condemned by Judaism as idolatry.
4. Meanwhile various forms of incest are permitted under the Talmudic understanding of the Noahide code.
5. “While the Christians do generally accept the Hebrew Bible as truly from God, many of them (those who accept the so-called divinity of Jesus) are idolaters according to the Torah, punishable by death, and certainly will not enjoy the World to Come.”
6. If Gentiles refuse to live a life of inferiority, then this signals their rebellion and the unavoidable necessity of Jewish warfare against their very presence.
7. The Talmud authority takes precedence over the Old Testament in Judaism, and in the Israeli state it nullifies the Bible. Jesus Christ condemned the traditions of the Mishnah (early Talmud) and those who taught it (Scribes and Pharisees), because the Talmud made void the teachings of the Holy Bible. See how Our Lord pointed out and condemned the Mishnah: “There assembled together unto Him the Pharisees and some of the scribes, coming from Jerusalem...and asked Him: Why do not Thy disciples walk according to the tradition of the ancients, but they eat bread with common hands? But He answering, said to them: Well did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites, as it is written: This people honors Me with their lips, but their heart

is far from Me...Making void the word of God by your own tradition, which you have given forth. And many other such like things you do” (*Mk 7:1-13*).

8. Today, in 2019, the Pharisees teach for doctrine the commandments of rabbis, not God. There is however a tiny Jewish sect called Karaites which makes considerable effort to adhere to the Old Testament alone, and are most hated and severely persecuted by orthodox Jewish rabbinate. It is my opinion that these are the Israelites of whom St. Paul wrote: “For I would not have you ignorant, brethren, of this mystery (lest you should be wise in your own conceits) that blindness in part has happened in Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles should come in, and so all Israel should be saved, as it is written: There shall come out of Sion, He that shall deliver and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob” (*Rm 11:25,26*).
9. Penalty for disobeying rabbis deserves death.
- 10 Talmud says Jesus’ mother was a whore: “She who was the descendant of princes and governors played the harlot with carpenters.”
- 11 It says Jesus is in hell, and was executed by a proper rabbinical court for idolatry, inciting other Jews to idolatry, and contempt of rabbinical authority.
- 12 It attacks Christians and Christian books and one statement states: Jews must destroy the books of the Christians, i.e. the New Testament.

The Zionists are very crafty - they will wage war by proxy, that is they will have other groups like ISIS (meaning the Islamic State of Iraq and Syria), al Qaeda (militant Muslims) fight against each other using Zionist money. In other words, they incite wars and rebellions.

“And I saw another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns, like a lamb, and he spoke as a dragon” (13:11).

Again, let us take this verse in sections:

I saw another beast coming up out of the earth: “God created man of the earth, and made him after His Own image” (*Si 17:1*). Man rebelled, but God redeemed him. Man rebelled again, and a particular man at the end of time set himself up as the ‘mouthpiece of God.’ This man is *‘the*

beast,’ taken from the earth, that is from those with such egotistical worldly desires, that he has sold his soul to be ‘high priest,’ the Zionist ‘spiritual’ ruler of man, the False Prophet, according to the desire of fallen man.

and he had two horns: He is a ‘religious,’ and his *two horns* is the mark of ecclesiastical and secular; spiritual and temporal authority.

like a lamb: He pretends to be kind and benevolent, but inside he is a ravaging wolf.

and he spoke as a dragon: He spoke as the Devil. He spoke with fire and brimstone coming out of his mouth with his pronouncements. Remember we recorded earlier what Jesus said: ‘*Think not that I will accuse you to the Father. There is one that accuses you, Moses, in whom you trust.*’ As we said before, the Jews have a book which they call the Talmud. This is a collection of writings which rabbis have made of interpretations of the Old Testament (which they call Scriptures). The Talmud in their new laws has precedence over the Bible. They go so far to say that anyone who denies the Talmud is punishable by death. Is it any wonder then that Jesus would say that ‘*there is one that accuses you, Moses, in whom you trust.*’ Jesus was accusing those Jews present at that time; prophesying and accusing those Jews of our present time.

Remember what Jesus said: “But before all these things, they will lay their hands on you and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues and into prisons, dragging you before kings and governors, for My Name’s sake. And it shall happen unto you for a testimony. Lay it up therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before how you shall answer, for I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to resist and gainsay. And you shall be betrayed by your parents and brethren and kinsmen and friends, and some of you they will put to death. And you shall be hated by all men for My Name’s sake” (*Lk 21:12-17*).

“And he executed all the power of the former beast in his sight. And he caused the earth, and them that dwell therein, to adore the first beast, whose wound to death was healed” (13:12).

The False Prophet, a Zionist, is the one who gives ‘spiritual’ sanction to the evil of the Antichrist (*former beast*). The ‘*wound to death*’ was the

old nation of Israel. The *'wound to death was healed'* is the new State of Israel which came into existence in 1948. This Israel is subsidized by the taxpayers of the United States of America and to a lesser degree from the European countries. The EU is also the old Roman Empire come to life in 1957 as we saw in 13:1.

"And he did great signs, so that he made also fire to come down from heaven unto the earth, in the sight of men. And he seduced them that dwell on the earth, for the signs which were given him to do in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth that they should make the image of the beast which had the wound by the sword and lived" (13:13,14).

Some argue that *'the former beast'* is the Red Dragon, others that it is the Antichrist. Suffice it to say that the Antichrist is totally possessed by the Devil, so that no matter which you wish to accept, the absolute power from and of Satan is present.

'He did great signs, so that he made also fire to come down from heaven unto the earth.' This heaven is the cosmos, not Heaven. The *'made also'* some suppose as just magical tricks employed by Satan, but remember that Lucifer, demoted to Satan, had power over the earth before he revolted. He *'made also fire'* to come down from heaven is not magical tricks to counteract the *'fire'* of the two faithful witnesses (*Apoc 11:5*), but it was true fire. Why is this? Look to the Book of Job and see the conversation between God and Satan, when the Lord said to Satan: "Behold, all that he has is in your hand, only put not forth your hand upon his person" (*Jb 1:12*). Then we see Job's servant coming and saying: "The *fire* of God fell from heaven, and striking the sheep and the servants, has consumed them; and I alone have escaped to tell you" (*Jb 1:16*). "And the Lord said to Satan: 'Have you considered My servant, Job, that there is none like him in the earth, a man simple and upright, and fearing God, and avoiding evil, and still keeping his innocence? But you have moved Me against him, that I should afflict him without cause'" (*Jb 2:3*). The power that God gave to Lucifer before he revolted in Heaven, was never taken away. God allows Satan (*the fallen Lucifer*) to use this power, and to whom Satan will he gives it (*Lk 4:6*). So God allows Satan to use this power, and in turn Satan gives it to the False Prophet, as it was stated above in verse 12, *'he executed all the power of*

the former beast. ' Therefore the False Prophet convinces the world to accept the remedy of the Antichrist, which the Devil gave for 'peace and prosperity.'

Who can be compared to this man, the False Prophet? Remember when the Jews sent from Jerusalem priests and Levites to John the Baptist and asked him: "Who are you...Are you the prophet?" And he answered: "No" (*Jn 1:20,21*). Well, there was another man 600 years later who said that he is '*the prophet.*' That was the False Prophet Mohammed, used by the devil as a decoy. Remember as we said before that the devil knows not the 'day nor the hour' and so he must always have his antichrist and false prophet in place. Although his false messages resound throughout the world, there is a more sinister one lurking in the wings. He is ready to come forward when his master the Antichrist says so. Already he has made a few very misleading pronouncements, if you do not believe this, look to the Talmud.

"And it was given him to give life to the image of the beast, and that the image of the beast should speak, and should cause that whosoever will not adore the image of the beast should be slain. And he shall make all, both little and great, rich and poor, freemen and bondmen, to have a character in their right hand or on their foreheads, and that no man might buy or sell, but he that has the character, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name" (13:15-17).

It has been widely said that this '*beast*' is the computer. In a sense it is, for the word 'computer' in the English language adds up to 666, and it is a means of disseminating filth and horror throughout the universe. It must also be stated that God's people use it to promote Truth and God's peace, and messages of faith, hope and charity. However, the image of the beast is the political system of godless Communism, enforced by satanic Masonry, and financed by diabolical Zionism. To disobey them (*the image of the beast*), is to incur martyrdom.

"Here is wisdom. He that has understanding, let him count the number of the beast. For it is the number of a man, and the number of him is six hundred sixty-six" (13:18).

The verse starts out with the first two gifts of the Holy Ghost, that is,

‘wisdom’ and ‘understanding,’ stating *‘Here is wisdom. He that has understanding...’* Isaiah says: “And there shall come forth a rod out of the root of Jesse, and a flower shall rise up out of his root. And the spirit of the Lord shall rest upon Him. The spirit of wisdom, and of understanding, the spirit of counsel, and of fortitude, the spirit of knowledge, and of godliness, and He shall be filled with the spirit of the fear of the Lord. He shall not judge according to the sight of the eyes, nor reprove according to the hearing of the ears, but He shall judge the poor with justice, and shall reprove with equity the meek of the earth: and He shall strike the earth with the rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips he shall slay the wicked” (*Is 11:1-4*). While Isaiah is speaking of Jesus Christ, he is also speaking of Eucharistic man, Christ Jesus. When Saint John in calling on wisdom and understanding, he is alerting us to the need for the fulness of seven Spirits of the Holy Ghost, and that he is also alerting us to Eucharistic unity in understanding the mystery here identified.

The common error is to write the numbers ‘666’ and leave out the *‘six hundred sixty-six.’* This is a mistake I have made in the past and tried coming up with all possible permutations as to the identity. Mea culpa! In order to correct all this, let us look at the spiritual meaning of the numbers. ‘Six’ is the number for man, created on the sixth day (*Gn 1:26-31*). ‘Hundred’ means plenitude. ‘Ten’ derivative for ‘sixty’ is completion in a worldly sense. ‘Six’ also means imperfection and/or iniquity. Then this *‘six hundred sixty-six.’* using the spiritual numbers means ‘a plenitude’ of men, who have brought together in a worldly sense, the fulness of the iniquity of man in his imperfection.’ (That is a Godless society, without God Almighty, Holy Trinity).

In this analysis I have not named an individual, but a group of individuals, which could mean a corporation or a system of authority. Having said that, the next part of the verse opens us up to a better understanding: *‘let him count the number of the beast. For it is the number of a man.’* Since it is a group, and is a ‘beast’ then we must look for an organization using the name of a man.

We said in Chapter 8:10,11 that the *great star falling from heaven* is Zionism (Star of David), Freemasonry, and Communism, which has spread it's evil empire in many regions (countries), areas of traffic (rivers and lakes), and the country is identified by it's accident. We said that Zionism/Freemasonry/Communism/Islam has brought war against religion, and this brings bitterness (*wormwood*). We said but did not identify the 'Star of David.' Now let us examine that so called 'star.'

Most people think that the 'Star of David' is a Biblical term, and that it is found in the Bible. This is nonsense, it is not Biblical, and it is not found in the Bible. The 'Star of David' was a symbol or flag that was created in 1948. It is a double triangle, having a hexagram as it's center with 6 points, 6 triangles, and in its interior is a 6 sided hexagon. The three 6's reveals the number of Satan the devil, or the beast, *'and the number of him is six hundred sixty-six.'*



The hexagram is used in magic, witchcraft, sorcery and in the occult, as well as in horoscopes by astrologers. The 'hex' is considered to possess some mysterious powers and the symbolic meaning is found in the occult. Sometimes we have heard the threat of putting the 'hex' on someone, that is putting a curse on them. The 'hexagram' is the center of the 'star' and signifies the glorification of man for the Zionist/Freemasonry/Communist (ZFC) cult, meaning that this cultist man is the authority over all life. The 'star' becomes a controlling symbol, which in the 'divine' occult symbolizes the cult image for worship and ritual. The cultist, witchcraft or yantra effect of the 'star' allows the Zionists to worship Satan and identify with him. Yantra is defined as a geometrical diagram used like an icon usually in meditation, symbolic of the devil or a goddess. The androgyne is defined as having the characteristics or nature of both male and female, neither specifically feminine nor masculine as we discussed earlier. The effeminate

androgynous effect is to produce a satanic monster which is a different species of man/woman, a combination of both, but neither one or the other. This is why that in these the last days of the world that Satan has pushed for the legal recognition of homosexual marriages, a.k.a. 'gay marriages' so that a 'new creation' legally married in the 'churches' is established and recognized. This Satanic 'new creation' is to counter God's 'new creation.' This is Satan's new creature, a totally possessed demonic being, to counter what Holy Writ says: "If then any be in Christ a new creature, the old things are passed away. Behold all things are made new" (2Co 5:17). Again this is emphasized: "For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision avails any thing, nor uncircumcision: but a new creature" (Ga 6:15).

In conclusion I say that this 'Star of David' is Satan's emblem. The action of the 666 is first and foremost the economic, political, and ecclesiastical systems which the man of iniquity puts into place, so that the ascent to power by the Antichrist and the False Prophet is automatic.

The First 'Six' - Zionism - economic 'kingdom of Zion.'

Zionism has for its god the money and the wealth of the world in the hands of a few. This group consists of mostly 'Jews' who are not true Jews, but atheistic satanists, along with other non-Jewish Zionist international atheists. Zionism produces the Antichrist, the False Prophet, and the tyrannical kingdom of power over the whole world. Zionism is the denial of the God of Creation, the God of Revelation, the Almighty Triune God. Zionism is the denial of God's Covenant given to Abraham and Moses for the Jewish nation.

The Second 'Six' - Freemasonry - rulership.

Freemasonry is the beginning of the descent into Hell of the unsuspecting, and the willing embracing of Satan by the knowing.

The Masonic organization has four main Lodges: Blue, Red, Black, and Orange. The assigned objective of each Lodge is as follows:

The **Blue Lodge**: take control of all the governments of the world.

The **Red Lodge**: assist the Blue with revolution if necessary.

The **Black Lodge**: assist with famine when needed.

The ***Orange Lodge***: destroy the Church.

Freemasonry has for it's god, the power and control of the governments of the world in the hands of a few.

The Third 'Six' - Communism - absolute political control of all people in a godless society, which is the third 'six' of 666.

Such are the forces of the Devil which are already amassed. They are all in position and at work. They have infiltrated into every nation on the planet, and fight against everyone who dares to disagree with them.

Chapter 14

The Lamb and the 144,000

“And I beheld and lo, a lamb stood upon mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty-four thousand, having his name, and the Name of his Father, written in their foreheads” (14:1).

We said before that this number is not the same as in Chapter 7. Here the ‘lamb’ is not specifically Jesus Christ, but Eucharistic man Christ Jesus, which is that unity of God in man, and man in God. They have this Eucharistic Name written in their foreheads, that is, Jesus Eucharist, the Lamb of God, Truth. Jesus is the fulness of Truth, and so the true Israel, ‘the people of God, Eucharistic man’ stand firm in the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, spiritually called *Mount Sion*. By ‘*written in their foreheads*’ is meant they know and believe in the Name of Christ Jesus, Holy Trinity, Father, Son and Holy Ghost, which can only be properly known by being in Eucharistic union with Almighty God.

Often we hear people say: ‘I love Jesus,’ or ‘Jesus is my Lord and my Savior,’ that is all very nice - but - they refuse to accept Him totally in the Seven Sacraments, because that is a ‘Catholic thing,’ or they refuse to accept His every word, because that is a ‘Protestant thing.’ These are the people who perhaps will be converted at the last moment to the wholeness and the fulness of truth, and join the remnant, spiritually called *144,000*,

“And I heard a voice from heaven, as the noise of many waters and as the voice of great thunder. And the voice which I heard was as the voice of harpers, harping on their harps, and they sung as it were a new canticle, before the Throne, and before the four living creatures, and the ancients, and no man could say the canticle, but those hundred forty-four thousand who were purchased from the earth” (14:2,3).

Here are gathered together all the angels and saints, Eucharistic man, the Church Triumphant in Heaven, along with the Church Militant on earth, in the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church. No one outside of Eucharistedness can know and therefore even sing or say ‘The Canticle of the Lamb,’ because they deny and do not know Christ Jesus, Holy

Eucharist. How can they say the new canticle if they deny the Seven Sacraments? Remember that Jesus said: “Many will say to Me in that day: Lord, Lord, have not we prophesied in Thy Name, and cast out devils in Thy Name, and done many miracles in Thy Name? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, you that work iniquity...Then you shall begin to say: We have eaten and drunk in Thy presence: and Thou hast taught in our streets. And He shall say to you: I know you not, whence you are. Depart from Me, all ye workers of iniquity” (Mt 7:22,23; Lk 13:26,27). Those who deny, cannot say the canticle. Those who submit to the evil of Zionism/Freemasonry/Communism/Islam cannot say the canticle.

“These are they who were not defiled with women, for they are virgins. These follow the Lamb whithersoever He goes. These were purchased from among men, the firstfruits to God and to the Lamb, and in their mouth there was found no lie, for they are immaculate before the Throne of God” (14:4,5).

Not being defiled with women signifies that they have not prostituted themselves with false teachings, have not allowed women to teach in the Church, as Scripture says: “Let women keep silence in the churches, for it is not permitted them to speak but to be subject, as also the law saith...For it is a shame for a woman to speak in the church” (1Co 14:34,35). Not being defiled means also to have not allowed any laymen to defile the Body of Christ in Holy Eucharist. Those who follow the Lamb have not followed the easy ‘teachings’ of the televangelists and their mercenary ways. These are Eucharistic men, and know where Holy Eucharist, the Lamb of God, resides. They are immaculate, they are His Church, obey His commandments, live and love His Sacraments, especially attentive to the first two, Baptism and Confession, so that they can receive the second two Holy Communion and Confirmation in the Holy Ghost, thus gaining co-union and unity in God.

‘These were purchased from among men, the firstfruits to God and to the Lamb, and in their mouth there was found no lie, for they are immaculate before the Throne of God, they lived in the Divine promises of God, which are contained in the Seven Sacraments.

What follows now are seven angels who set the stage for the final battle, which we outline as follows.

1st angel: 14:6. Angel having the Eternal Gospel.

2nd angel: 14:8. Angel saying: That great Babylon is fallen.

3rd angel: 14:9. Angel saying: If any man adore the beast...

4th angel: 14:14. Angel with the sharp sickle...

5th angel: 14:15. Angel from the Temple: Thrust in sickle...

6th angel: 14:17. Angel having a sharp sickle...

7th angel: 14:18. Angel who had power over fire...

“And I saw another angel flying through the midst of heaven, having the Eternal Gospel, to preach unto them that sit upon the earth, and over every nation, and tribe, and tongue, and people” (14:6).

Saint John does not identify these different angels, like *‘flying through the midst of heaven,’* because it is necessary to identify the message first and then the messenger. The message is *‘The Eternal Gospel,’ ‘The Eternal Testament’* as Jesus said at the Last Supper previously quoted in 5:6 - *“This is the Chalice of My Blood, of the New and Eternal Testament,”* which is the Third and Final Testament, the Eucharistic Reign of Christ on earth.

It is necessary to understand the meaning of the Three Testaments:

The (*Old*) First Testament is the Testament of God the Father.

The (*New*) Second Testament is the Testament of God the Son.

The (*Final*) Third Testament is that of God the Holy Ghost.

In the Second (*New*) Testament, Jesus declared to the Father: *“I have glorified Thee on the earth, I have finished the work which Thou gave Me to do” (Jn 17:4).* He glorified the Father because He gave Holy Trinity to man in Holy Eucharist. He *‘finished the work,’* because He gave us the Holy Ghost to help us destroy Satan and return the world to God the Father, as He said: *“But the Paraclete, the Holy Ghost, Whom the Father will send in My Name, He will teach you all things and bring all things to your mind, whatsoever I shall have said to you” (Jn 14:26).*

The messenger *‘flying through the midst of heaven’* is none other than the Blessed Mother Mary. Unfortunately most non-Catholics do not

believe in the apparitions of the Blessed Ever Virgin, which Jesus foretold these when He said: “If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they believe, if one rise again from the dead” (*Lk 16:31*). This should not be surprising as we saw that even popes, prelates and priests do not always believe and sometimes disobey Her requests, as we saw with the example of disobedience of the second John XXIII.

“saying with a loud voice: ‘Fear the Lord, and give Him honour, because the hour of His judgment is come. And adore ye Him that made heaven and earth, the sea, and the fountains of waters” (14:7).

This entreaty, yet warning, is given to ecclesiastical, political, economic, and academicians alike, as well as to the private citizens of the world, to turn to God, and do not listen to the blasphemous lies of the Antichrist, and the False Prophet, and all their lackeys.

The *loud voice* is heard throughout the world and the essence of these apparitions are:

Apparition of Our Lady of Guadalupe, which we discussed in 12:1.

As we said before that the Protestant Revolution of Luther was raging in Europe tearing many millions away from the true faith, and at the same time, many millions were being converted to the true faith in Mexico at the same time.

One side note to all of this. In 1570 a portrait of the Holy Tilma was sent by the Archbishop of Mexico to the King Phillip II of Spain. The Tilma portrait was placed in the cabin of the Admiral Don Juan of Austria, the commander of the Christian Naval fleet who was fighting against the Muslim invaders. After the fall of Christian Constantinople in 1452 to the Ottoman Empire, the Turks were threatening to overrun and destroy Europe, and establish their pagan Muslim religion of Islam, which denies the Triune God. A great naval battle took place near Lepanto, and if the Turks won this battle against the Christian forces, there was no resistance to stop them from overrunning Rome and the rest of the world. The Admiral went into his cabin and beseeched Our Lady of Guadalupe to help. At the same time his Christian fleet prayed the Rosary. The Muslims were defeated at the battle of Lepanto, on 7th October, 1571, and this broke the forces of Islam in their threatened

overrun of Europe. Turkey, for the first time in several centuries, was left without a navy. Perhaps the most important result of the battle was its effect on men's minds, the victory had ended the myth that the Turks could not be beaten. The truth is that Our Lady crushes the head of Satan (*Gn 3:15*).

This Apparition was approved by the Roman Catholic Church.

Apparition of Our Lady of La Salette.

In French Alps, on the Mountain of La Salette, (south of Grenoble, near the village of Corps), the 19th of September, 1846, Our Lady appeared to Melanie Calvat, Shepheress of La Salette, and to her neighbor boy Maximin. The Blessed Mother Mary was sitting in a nearby hollow, with her head in her hands, crying. The two children drew near and here are some of the words Mary said to them: "If my people do not wish to submit themselves, I am forced to let go of the hand of my Son. It is so heavy and weighs me down so much I can no longer keep hold of it...The priests, ministers of my Son, the priests, by their wicked lives, by their irreverence and their impiety in the celebration of the Holy Mysteries, by their love of money, their love of honors and pleasures, *the priests have become cesspools of impurity*...God will strike in an unprecedented way...I make an urgent appeal to the earth. I call on the true disciples of the living God Who reigns in Heaven; I call on the true followers of Christ made man, the only true Saviour of men; I call on my children, the true faithful, those who have given themselves to me so that I may lead them to my Divine Son, those whom I carry in my arms, so to speak, those who have lived on my spirit...Fight, children of light, you, the few who can see. For now is the time of all times, the end of all ends..."

The Church did not accept that 'the priests have become cesspools of impurity,' and the message was watered down.

Apparition of Our Lady of Lourdes.

In the year 1854, Pope Pius IX made the dogmatic acclamation of the Immaculate Conception of the Blessed Ever Virgin Mary. Four years later, there began the series of wonderful visions of the Blessed Virgin Mary seen by the humble uneducated, and asthmatic maid Bernadette Soubirous, who lived in abject poverty with her parents. On 11th

February, 1858, while collecting firewood on the banks of the Gave River near Lourdes, Bernadette saw a vision of the Virgin Mary in a cave called Massabielle, above the riverbank...on 25th February, our Blessed Mother caused a spring to flow where none had been before. On 25th March, the Virgin Mary said to Bernadette: “I am the Immaculate Conception,” and directed her to build a chapel on the site. Miracles were reported at the shrine, and in the waters of the spring. These apparitions were ecclesiastically approved.

Apparition of Our Lady of Knock (County Mayo, Ireland).

On 21 August, 1879, Mary McLoughlin, housekeeper to the local priest, thought that the three figures outside the church were holy statues purchased by the priest. Two of the figures were recognized as the Blessed Virgin Mary and St. Joseph, and the third figure was St. John the Evangelist. To one side and slightly behind the figures there was an Altar with a Lamb with a Cross on it's shoulder. Around Jesus and the Altar were angels representing the seven angels of the Apocalypse.

Standing next to the Altar was Saint John the Evangelist with the Book of the Apocalypse opened and facing away from him. He was pointing to the open pages telling us that we must read Holy Scripture, and understand the seven seals of the Book of the Apocalypse. Standing next to Saint John is our Blessed Mother with her hands raised toward Heaven, telling us to turn to Jesus. Standing next to Holy Mary is Blessed Saint Joseph, with his hands joined in prayer, telling us to protect the family. This apparition is apocalyptic in nature. The Apparition was approved by the Roman Catholic Church.

Apparition of Our Lady of Fatima (Portugal).

The apparitions at Fatima began on 13 May, 1917 as twelve year old Lucia and her younger cousins Jacinta and Francisco were tending sheep in a vale known as the Cova da Iria. When they ran for shelter during a storm, they saw, hovering over the branches of an oak tree, “a Lady dressed all in white, more brilliant than the sun, shedding rays of light clearer and stronger than a crystal glass filled with the most sparkling water and pierced by the burning rays of the sun.” When Lucia asked where she came from, the Lady said she came from Heaven. The Blessed

Virgin Mary appeared six times in all on the thirteenth of the month. The final apparition on 13 October 1917 Our Lady of Fatima performed the promised miracle, the 'Miracle of the Sun,' which was witnessed by over 60,000 people.

Our Lady gave **three secrets** and showed the children hell and warned of God's threatened punishment. The end of World War I and the beginning of World War II were foretold, and she spoke of a sign, "a night illuminated by an unknown light," that will mean that God "is going to punish the world for its crimes by means of war, hunger, and persecution of the Church and of the Holy Father." **This was the first secret.**

The second secret was both a request and a prophecy. She said that in order to prevent the punishment she came to ask the consecration of Russia to her Immaculate Heart and Communion of reparation on the first Saturday of each month. She said if they listened to her requests, Russia would be converted and there would be peace. If not, Russia would spread her errors throughout the entire world, provoking wars and persecutions of the Church, the good would be martyred and the Holy Father would have much to suffer, and various nations would be annihilated. Our Lady also said that in the end her Immaculate Heart would triumph. The Holy Father would consecrate Russia to Her and it would be converted and a certain period of peace would be granted to humanity.

The Third Secret was to be revealed to the world upon the death of Lucia (who became Sister Lucia), or in 1960, whichever came first. Although the apparitions and messages were accepted by Popes Benedict XV; Pius XI; and Pius XII, the pope in 1960 was the second John XXIII and he disobeyed the Mother of Jesus Christ and refused to reveal the message to the world as requested, a fact previously addressed.

In the following and remaining two apparitions, you will notice that Our Lady appeals directly to the people. Although many priests and several of the hierarchy have visited the sites, the message is for the little flock who do believe.

Apparition of Our Lady of Garabandal.

The Blessed Ever Virgin Mary appeared to four humble children at Garabandal, near Santander in Northern Spain, over 2000 times between the years 1962 and 1965, during the time of the Vatican II Council. In 1961 the Archangel Michael appeared to the children with a message from Our Lady which said: "We must make many sacrifices, perform much penance, and visit the Blessed Sacrament frequently. If we do not, a chastisement will befall us. The cup is already filling up and if we do not change, a very great chastisement will come upon us." In 18 June 1965 Our Lady said to the children, again through Saint Michael: "As my message of 18 October 1961, has not been complied with and has not been made known to the world, I am advising you that this is the last one. Before, the cup was filling up. Now it is flowing over. *Many cardinals, many bishops and many priests are on the road to perdition and are taking many souls with them. Less and less importance is being given to the Eucharist...*" This message of warning was given while many cardinals, many bishops, and many priests were in session during the Vatican II Council. I further believe that the messages of Garabandal contained information pertaining to the Third Secret of Fatima which the second John XXIII refused to release to the world. Our Lady is not silenced by arrogant man!

This message was not accepted by the Roman Catholic Church.

Apparition of Our Lady of Akita, Japan.

Our Blessed Mother said to Sister Agnes Sasagawa on 13 October, 1973, the 56th anniversary of Our Lady's last apparition at Fatima, and the Miracle of the sun, in 1917, and the 13th anniversary of the disobedience of John XXIII to reveal the Third Secret to the world:

"My dear daughter, listen well to what I have to say to you. You will inform your superior. As I told you, if men do not repent and better themselves, the Father will inflict a terrible punishment on all humanity. It will be a punishment greater than the deluge, such as one will never have seen before. Fire will fall from the sky and will wipe out a great part of humanity...the good as well as the bad, sparing neither priests nor faithful. The survivors will find themselves so desolate that they will

envy the dead. The only arms which will remain for you will be the Rosary and the Sign left by my Son. Each day recite the prayer of the Rosary. With the Rosary, pray for the Pope, the bishops and priests.

“The work of the devil will infiltrate even into the Church in such a way that one will see cardinals opposing cardinals, bishops against bishops. The priests who venerate Me will be scorned and opposed by their confreres...churches and altars sacked; the Church will be full of those who accept compromises and the demon will press many priests and consecrated souls to leave the service of the Lord.

“The demon will be especially implacable against souls consecrated to God. The thought of the loss of so many souls is the cause on my sadness. If sins increase in number and gravity, there will be no longer pardon for them...”

Apparitions of Our Lady of Medjugore.

Our Lady of Medjugore. On 24 June, 1981, Our Blessed Mother appeared to children in the village of Medjugore. Reflecting on young David and his battle against Goliath when he confronted the giant with just five pebbles in his pouch (*1K 17:40*), our Lady gave the children five pebbles to fight Satan:

- 1). Frequent Confession,
- 2). Holy Mass,
- 3). Holy Eucharist,
- 4). fasting, and
- 5). the daily Holy Rosary.

Our Blessed Mother Mary, has been appearing almost daily since then, with messages of hope, prayer, and fasting.

These last two apparitions have not yet been approved by the Roman Catholic Church, but the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church has visited and approves them.

So many people who call themselves ‘Christians’ do not believe in the apparitions, fulfilling what was said above: *‘If they hear not Moses and*

the prophets, neither will they believe, if one rise again from the dead.'

"And another angel followed, saying: 'That great Babylon is fallen, is fallen, which made all nations to drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication'" (14:8).

The Babylon which is fallen is the sum total of the sins in the world which Eucharistic man has successfully defeated and remains true to Christ Jesus. With this spiritual victory, the proclamation is made by a Eucharistic bishop who has trusted in the Blood of Jesus, Messiah, that Satan has been defeated by mortal man. This is the announcement that all the efforts made by the Zionists, Masons, Communists, Islam, Judaism, and the ecclesiastical ecumenists, have come to nought. In Eucharistic man, Babylon has fallen! We will deal in greater detail with this in chapter 18.

"And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice: 'If any man shall adore the beast, and his image, and receive his character in his forehead, or in his hand, he also shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is mingled with pure wine in the cup of His wrath, and shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the sight of the holy angels, and in the sight of the Lamb, and the smoke of their torments, shall ascend up for ever and ever, neither have they rest day nor night, who have adored the beast, and his image, and whoever receives the character of his name. Here is the patience of the saints, who keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus'" (14:9-12).

Here is the final warning by a Bishop in the Eucharistic Church to the ordinary people who are not in 'leadership,' but are following the Antichrist and the False Prophet. The warning is clear and simple: "Stop believing their heresies, their lies, their promise of easy life, their false systems, their false gods, or go to Hell for ever and ever." Hell exists, and fire and brimstone is the fuel for the torments. It is an individual choice, your choice. *Patience* is the ability to suffer persecution without becoming angry or upset, and to pray for those who persecute you, to bless and curse not (*Rm 12:14*).

"And I heard a voice from heaven, saying to me: 'Write: Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord, from henceforth now, says the Spirit, that they

may rest from their labors, for their works follow them” (14:13).

This is the second blessing of the Apocalypse: *‘Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord,’* that is, those who die to sin, who die to the *‘character of the beast,’* who die to self, and are willing to die for their belief in Jesus Eucharist. *‘From henceforth now,’* because they are in Eucharistic union in the Holy Trinity.

‘Their works follow them.’ This is the great final conversion, and the last of the martyrs to die on the earth. Their great heroism in the face of the final onslaught by Satan against their person is rewarded by being with the Lord God Almighty for ever.

“And I saw and behold, a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sitting like to the Son of man, having on his head a crown of gold and in his hand a sharp sickle” (14:14).

Let us make an identification here. *‘One sitting like to the Son of man...a crown of gold and in his hand a sharp sickle,’* is Petrus Romanus the Great Monarch. He is priest and king doing all that must be done in perfect harmony, as Zachariah says: *“...and the counsel of peace shall be between them both” (Zc 6:13).* *‘a crown of gold’* is the symbol of his spiritual power and authority. *‘in his hand a sharp sickle’* signifies his temporal power and authority.

As we will see in verses 17-20 that this ‘angel’ is Eucharistic man, who is given spiritual authority (*crown of gold*) and temporal power (*sharp sickle in his hand*) from God to execute judgements against the Devil, the Antichrist, the False Prophet and their followers. The *‘cloud’* is a symbol of threatening storm, and *‘white’* is the victorious Throne from which Eucharistic man operates.

“And another angel came out from the Temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat upon the cloud: ‘Thrust in your sickle and reap, because the hour is come to reap. For the harvest of the earth is ripe.” (14:15).

The hierarchal advisors within the Eucharistic Church let Great Monarch Petrus Romanus in his office of temporal authority, know that all is now ready to begin the final battle. *“Start the counter attack now!”*

And he that sat on the cloud thrust his sickle into the earth, and the earth was reaped” (14:16).

The Great Monarch followed the advice, and cast his sickle into the earth, and the earth was reaped. The *sickle into the earth* is the release of all the power of God to destroy those who war against the inhabitants of the earth and who promote the evil of Satan. This is the release of all the armies that are in Heaven to come now and defeat sin, the devil, and all his evil spirits, and the humans who adore Satan. This is the mighty battle, the battle of the Ages.

“And another angel came out of the Temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle” (14:17).

This bishop coming out of the Eucharistic Church represents the spiritual power of Eucharistic man to defeat Satan and his cohorts: “Not with an army, nor by might, but by My Spirit, saith the Lord of hosts” (Zc 4:6). It is here understood that the armies of God in Heaven are on the march: “And the armies that are in Heaven followed him on white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean” (Apoc 19:14).

“And another angel came out from the Altar, who had power over fire. And he cried with a loud voice to him that had the sharp sickle, saying: ‘Thrust in thy sharp sickle and gather the clusters of the vineyard of the earth, because the grapes thereof are ripe’ (14:18).

Again we see a member of the Eucharistic hierarchy who has power over excommunications (*fire*) to give the edict that those who do not turn away from following the 666 beast, the hordes aligned with him, and their sinful ways, will be excommunicated, that is, given over to the power of Satan (1Co 5:1-5; 2Co 2:1-11). This is their last chance.

And the angel thrust in his sharp sickle into the earth, and gathered the vineyard of the earth, and cast it into the great press of the wrath of God, and the press was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the press, up to the horses’ bridles, for a thousand and six hundred furlongs” (14:18-20).

We saw at the opening of the fifth seal, the Altar, and the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and asking ‘How long O Lord...?’ We saw that they were told to ‘rest for a little time till their fellow

servants and their brethren, who are to be slain even as they, should be filled up.’ Now the time is come, and the final command is given to the angel, Eucharistic man, who has power over fire to cleanse and purify the atmosphere, the environment, to destroy those who caused such sin, pollution, and anguish to the citizens of the earth.

‘the great press of the wrath of God’ is His promised tribulation to those who prefer the Devil to God. The press is *‘trodden without the city,’* that is, it is outside the City of God, the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, for no slaughter will be made evermore in God’s creation. This is the final cleansing of sin from the earth.

When it is written: *‘blood came out of the press, up to the horses’ bridles, for a thousand and six hundred furlongs,’* it is meant that the number of deaths in this battle of the ages is immense, as foretold by the Prophet Zachariah: “And there shall be in all the earth, saith the Lord, two parts in it shall be scattered and shall perish...” (*Zc 13:8*).

The distance of *‘a thousand and six hundred furlongs’* is 200 miles, or 333 kilometers in our modern measurements. But there is a spiritual meaning.

Understand first the spiritual meaning of numbers used here:-

1,000 is an immense number.

100 is plenitude, sufficient, or fulness.

6 is imperfection, iniquity.

Therefore, there is an immense number of people who will be destroyed, and who make up the fulness of the great number of iniquities which cover the earth.

Chapter 15

The sea of glass. The seven vials

“And I saw another sign in heaven, great and wonderful, seven angels having the seven last plagues, for in them is filled up the wrath of God” (15:1).

As we saw in chapter 12 what is seen here is not a ‘vision’ but a *sign!* The *sign, great and wonderful*, shows here that Eucharistic man, Christ Jesus, has conquered, and is about to deliver the final (*last*) defeat on those who oppose God’s creation. *Seven* signifies spiritual perfection, mystical, prophetic, and divine universality. We have reached the stage of the final perfection of the universe in Christ Jesus.

“And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire, and them that had overcome the beast, and his image, and the number of his name, standing on the sea of glass, having the harps of God” (15:2).

The ‘*sea of glass*’ is the sea of absolute faith, ‘*mingled with fire,*’ because Eucharistic man has held strong in faith, has gone through the Baptism of fire, has had to endure many fiery trials. The people who have arrived at this purified state, have denied the beasts of the 666, and have the *harps* of God. *Harps* in scripture are symbols of the praise, which the saints on earth and in Heaven render to God.

“and singing the canticle of Moses, the servant of God, and the canticle of the Lamb, saying: ‘Great and wonderful are Thy works, O Lord God Almighty, just and true are Thy ways, O King of ages. Who shall not fear Thee, O Lord, and magnify Thy Name? For Thou only are holy. For all nations shall come and shall adore in Thy sight, because Thy judgments are manifest” (15:3,4).

The canticle of Moses is the conclusion of the Canticle in Exodus, which incidentally is also found in Exodus chapter 15, the same chapter as here in the Apocalypse (*Ex 15:1-19*). Moses and the Israelites sang: ‘The Lord is my strength, and my praise, and He is become salvation to me, He is my God, and I will glorify Him, the God of my father, and I will exalt Him. The Lord is as a Man of war, Almighty is His Name.’ Here in the Apocalypse they confirm: ‘*Great and wonderful are Thy works, O*

Lord God Almighty...all nations shall come and shall adore in Thy sight, because Thy judgments are manifest.’ The Cantic of Moses of the Old Testament, is now fulfilled in the Cantic of the Lamb in the New Testament, completing all in the Third Testament, which is the victory of the Eucharistic Reign of Christ. The song of victory will be taken up again in chapter 16, and then brought to completion in chapter 19.

“And after these things, I looked, and behold, the Temple of the Tabernacle of the Testimony in heaven was opened” (15:5).
Note here this *‘Temple of the Tabernacle of the Testimony in heaven’* and see that it was opened.

So what is this *Temple*? The *‘Temple of the Tabernacle of the Testimony’* is the Third Testament completing what God gave to Moses in the First (*Old*) Testament. God said to Moses: “Thou shalt put in the Ark the Testimony which I will give thee....and thou shalt make the holy oil of unction, an ointment compounded after the art of the perfumer, and therewith thou shalt anoint the Tabernacle of the Testimony, and the Ark of the Testament...The cloud covered the Tabernacle of the Testimony, and the glory of the Lord filled it” (*Ex 25:16; 30:25,26; 40:32*). The ‘Ark’ is at one and the same time, Jesus Who is the Testament from the Father; Mary the Ark who carried Jesus the Testament; and Eucharistic man who carries Jesus Eucharistic within himself.

This Testament is the fulfilment of what was promised in the First Testament by God the Father, Who promised to send His Only Begotten Son to redeem mankind.

The Second Testament was fulfilled by Jesus, Who with the Father, promised to send the Holy Ghost in the Third and Final Testament.

The Holy Ghost would inspire, with His Sevenfold Gifts, those who would believe, and would bring to completion God’s plan of salvation in this the Third Testament, which is to put the Devil and his cohorts into Hell for all eternity, and re-open the Gates of Paradise.

Jesus said at the Last Supper: “Drink ye, all of this” (*Mt 26:27*). “This Is

the Chalice of My Blood (*Lk 22:20*) ...of the New and Eternal Testament (*Mk 14:24; 1Jn 5:11*) ...Which shall be shed for you (*Lk 22:20*) ...and for many (*Mk 14:24*) ...unto the remission of sins” (*Mt 26:28*). Then Saint Paul records what Jesus told him: “As often as ye do these things, ye shall do them in commemoration of Me” (*1Co 11:24-26*). This New and Eternal Testament is the Third Testament, the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, which is eternal, and sin shall be no more (*the remission of sins*). The word ‘*remission*’ means the cancellation of a debt or penalty, also the formal forgiveness of sin. The devil is sin.

Therefore when it says that the ‘*Temple of the Tabernacle of the Testimony in heaven,*’ it is saying the Eucharistic Reign of Christ on earth is revealed to the whole world, and that Heaven and earth are joined together in Eucharistic splendor, in the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church.

“And the seven angels came out of the Temple, having the seven plagues, clothed with clean and white linen, and girt about the breasts with golden girdles” (15:6).

The *angels* come out of heaven (the Temple, Church) to inflict the final bowls of wrath upon the unbelieving world. Since there can be no killing in the Third Testament, the angels step out of the Temple, to pour out the last plagues. These Eucharistic priests of God (*angels*), are immaculate; ‘*clothed with linen,*’ they have no sin; ‘*golden girdle,*’ signifying the authority and dignity of the royalty of the priesthood of Jesus, and so are qualified to pour out God’s wrath.

“And one of the four living creatures gave to the seven angels seven golden vials, full of the wrath of God, Who lives for ever and ever” (15:7).

We saw in the 4th chapter, these ‘*living creatures*’ are Eucharistic man, having the mind of Christ, with authority over God’s creation. Here now, Eucharistic man, using his authority which he has from God, gives to the priests, the power to cleanse the cosmos, the earth, and all that is therein, using God’s measure (*golden vial*).

“And the Temple was filled with smoke from the majesty of God and

from His power. And no man was able to enter into the Temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were fulfilled” (15:8).

‘The Temple was filled with smoke from the majesty of God, and from His power,’ in that the awesome glory which the Holy Trinity, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, give to Eucharistic man, in the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, which includes the angels and saints, is so powerful that it is impossible for anyone other than those who are Eucharisted, to be present in such a constant yet ‘natural’ divine ecstatic state.

‘no man was able to enter into the Temple’ means that *no man*, meaning sinful man, will not be able to enter into the Eucharistic Church at this time, but must await the final cleansing of the earth and it’s inhabitants.

‘The Temple’, the Church (*heaven on earth*) is closed to all further converts until the final wrath is completed: “And the Lord will create upon every place of Mount Sion, and where He is called upon, a cloud by day, and a smoke and the brightness of a flaming fire in the night, for over all the glory shall be a protection” (*Is 4:5*).

Eucharistic man on earth is protected from all the evils that shall befall the unbelieving inhabitants. There will be conversions during the next phase, but they will have to live out their ‘purgatory’ on earth as part of their atonement for prior denials and unbelief.

Chapter 16

The seven vials are poured out

Earlier we saw in 6:1-8, 12-14, plagues of war, famine and plagues, and in 9:18. fire, smoke and brimstone; 11:6, drought, power over waters to turn them into blood and to strike the earth with all plagues. Here in 16:9 great heat and in 16:21 great hail. Later in 18:8. death, mourning, famine, and the fire. All of these plagues are inter-active and could be summarized as follows: 1) *Diseases*. 2) *War*. 3) *Social Collapse*. 4) *Political Tyranny*. 5) *Economic Collapse causing famine and pestilences*. 6) *Religious Persecution*. 7) *Natural Disasters*.

An outline of the seven plagues which were foretold in 15:1 are now identified:-

An outline of the seven plagues is:-

1st Plague: 16:2 a sore and grievous wound.

2nd Plague: 16:3 vial of blood upon the sea.

3rd Plague: 16:4 vial of blood on rivers and fountains.

4th Plague: 16:8 vial of heat and fire upon the sun.

5th Plague: 16:10 vial of darkness on seat of the beast.

6th Plague: 16:12 release of unclean spirits like frogs.

7th Plague: 16:17 the great earthquake and hailstone.

We will see the wrath being poured upon the land, sea, and air. They are poured out in rapid succession, for as soon as one is poured the next follows. There is no rest in between, so that people must make an immediate decision, follow Christ as did the Apostles (*Mk 1:17-20*), or face the dire consequences. As in previous chapters, we will assume the fundamental word and examine the spiritual.

“And I heard a great voice out of the Temple, saying to the seven angels: ‘Go and pour out the seven vials of the wrath of God upon the earth’ (16:1).

The ‘*great voice out of the Temple*’ is the command of Eucharistic man in the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church (*Temple*), in which the very definite command is given: “*Go! Pour out the wrath of God.*” Who is

this great *voice*? It is the authoritative *voice* of the Great Monarch Petrus Romanus, in his capacity of temporal power as we saw in *14:14*. He sees the iniquities of sinful man and encourages the Church to accept that now is the time to execute the *wrath of God*. Why is the wrath being poured out? Because now Heaven is joined to earth, and sinful man has refused to listen to the warnings of God, so Eucharist man Christ Jesus must proceed to bring all back to Almighty God his Father.

“And the first (angel) went and poured out his vial upon the earth. And there fell a sore and grievous wound upon men who had the character of the beast, and upon them that adored the image thereof” (16:2).

We said before that the ‘*earth*’ is materialism and those who look to things and gadgets as their strength. This ‘*character*’ is the personality of the Devil, and the ‘reward’ is Hell for all eternity! While these men accepted *the character of the beast*, which includes any of the traits of evil like not honoring God, or not keeping holy on the Sabbath, homosexuality and the likes, they now pay the price for their choice. Jesus said: “The things which proceed out of the mouth, come forth from the heart, and those things defile a man, for from the heart come forth evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false testimonies, blasphemies” (*Mt 15:18,19*). The wrath also comes upon those who vote for politicians or governments who promote these sins. This ‘*character*’ is his sin, his ways, and his evil designs, God shows them the result of their evils.

If they repent, they will be free from the evil one and instead, receive the Character of Christ, and this result is Heaven for all eternity!

“And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea. And there came blood as it were of a dead man, and every living soul died in the sea” (16:3).

In Exodus, the waters were turned into blood and after a time, God, through His servant Moses, turned them back into clear water (*Ex 7:17-15*). We said before that the ‘*sea*’ is the population of all nations who see their strength in their superior numbers. ‘*Blood as it were of a dead man*’ includes all defiled sacrifices of erroneous priests and ‘non-priests,’ phoney ministers and ‘teachers’ unlearned and rebellious in the full

Word of God.

Here the inhabitants of the *sea* died from the plague of choosing religious error, heresies and schisms, but God is still seeking for man to repent and not sacrifice his own blood to Satan. Remember that once error is mixed with truth, then all is error. “Know you not that a little leaven corrupts the whole lump? Purge out the old leaven, that you may be a new paste, as you are unleavened, for Christ our Pasch is sacrificed. Therefore, let us feast, not with the old leaven, nor with the leaven of malice and wickedness, but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth” (1Co 5:7,8).

“And the third poured out his vial upon the rivers and the fountains of waters, and there was made blood. And I heard the angel of the waters saying: ‘Thou art just, O Lord, Who are, and Who was, the Holy One, because Thou have judged these things. For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and Thou have given them blood to drink, for they are worthy.’ And I heard another, from the altar, saying: ‘Yea, O Lord God Almighty, true and just are Thy judgments” (16:4-7).

The ‘*rivers*’ are the apostate churches, synagogues, mosques, various ‘temples,’ financiers, petty administrators and publishers of the errors mentioned before. Because these heralds and followers of the evil one refused to come to Jesus, but promoted sin instead, recruiting men to become antichrists, so now there is given to them a foretaste of the unending thirst in the never ending flames of Hell.

‘*Fountains of waters*’ are all false religions, including the more than 30,000 Protest (also called Protestant) ‘christian’ churches of error. ‘*Shed the blood of saints and prophets,*’ in that they have taught error, and led many who should have come to the truth of Eucharistic man Christ Jesus, but did not, because of the persuasive ways of the preachers (many false prophets).

‘*Thou have given them blood to drink,*’ for now God lets them drink of the poison of their false teachings which is darkness, and so they receive dead words (*blood of man*), that is without the Spirit of God.

“And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun. And it was given unto him to afflict men with heat and fire. And men were scorched with

great heat, and they blasphemed the Name of God, Who has power over these plagues. Neither did they penance to give Him glory” (16:8,9). ‘Afflict men with heat and fire,’ that is the Holy Ghost will oppose them with the true word of God which is in opposition to the blasphemous errors being taught in modern day ‘christendom’ by the multitude of opposing ‘protest churches.’

Sinful man again is given a foretaste of the flames which await those who follow Satan and do not repent. Sin is death, and God said to Adam if he disobeyed God, he would ‘die the death’ (*Gn 2:17*). The followers of Antichrist and the False Prophet continue to blaspheme God and Eucharistic man, (*the Name of God*, for every Eucharistic man is the son of God, Christ Jesus, as we saw earlier). Even with seeing the glory revealed in the protection of Eucharistic man, evil men who love sin and are antichrists, refused to acknowledge the power of God, and the protection given to His people.

“And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast. And his kingdom became dark, and they gnawed their tongues for pain” (16:10).

‘His kingdom became dark’ because the ‘Word of God,’ the Spirit of God is withheld from them. What is the ‘*seat of the beast*’? It is his power! But wherein does his power lie? It is in the robbery of the poor who are cajoled into registering with the ‘*world church*,’ the amount of tithing they contribute. The poor get a ‘tax break,’ while the pastor (promoters of error) gets rich. The ‘*seat of the beast*’ is also the world wide web of the internet, cell phones and all the high tech instruments of surveillance, etc. The devil tries to copy God by having all the information one needs stored in a system which is called ‘Cloud.’ At the Exodus, God protected His people with a cloud as recorded: “And the Lord went before them to show the way, by day in a pillar of a cloud, and by night in a pillar of fire; that He might be the guide of their journey at both times. There never failed the pillar of the cloud by day, nor the pillar of fire by night, before the people” (*Ex 13:21,22*). It is amazing how Satan fools the general population, and the gullible buy his phoney ‘cloud.’

The '*world church*' is also the acceptance by the various religious institutions to become part of the system which allows them to obtain a 'charity number' and receive donations from their 'members.' These contributions are not taxable to the 'church' and the 'contributor' can obtain a deduction on their personal income tax. The government in turn control what the 'church' may teach and promote, thus the churches of the world are controlled by the 'governments of the world' who in actual fact are the one '*world church*'!

The power is also in money, energy, government control, fantastic technology, and super-spying ability over all the citizens of the earth through satellites. We saw earlier: 'And the stars from heaven fell upon the earth, as the fig tree casts it's green figs when it is shaken by a great wind.'

See here the satellites and drones being destroyed so that 'instant communications' and the information technology is destroyed. We saw the fire being poured out and so the energy, and oil, and all the systems which are computer dependant are destroyed. The governments which are 'computer sensitive' become totally disrupted, for their tools of control are taken away. The financial markets are in disarray, as their ability to compute is taken back to the age of the quill pen! Food production from synthetics is gone, farms had been sold for industrial and housing projects, and so men '*gnawed their tongues for pain,*' deprived of the Light of Christ, and the earthly food and technology.

There is also another even more sinister plot by the devil which is here destroyed by the collapse of the 'information technology' (IT). The Satanic cult of Zionism/Freemasonry/Communism/Islam have almost perfected the total control over the mind and human activities with the computer internet and WiFi.

The 'world powers' use the terms: Trans-humanism; Technological Singularity; and Transcendence. Their objective is to have a society which is totally dependent upon the demonic mind produced and transmitted to the entire world, and this IT would replace all dependence on mother or father, school, church or any reference to Jesus Christ. This

system is called ‘trans-humanism’ which is the elimination of God, the Almighty Creator of Heaven and earth, and replaced with the liar from the beginning - Lucifer, Satan, Devil (*Jn 8:44*).

One of the tools the satanists use is ‘Technological Singularity’ which is the trick of having people use the cell phones, iPhones, iPads and various web devices to entertain themselves and not be bothered communicating personally with other human beings. This is noticeable in public when often whole families are in a restaurant and all on their cell phones, with little or no communication with each other, they are isolated from each other, and totally enraptured in their own ‘singularity.’ Singularity is defined as the point in time when artificial intelligence becomes smarter than the unaided human mind. The objective of the evil forces is to have the human being transcend into a clone-like zombie who will do always the ‘will’ of the device. This ‘transcendence’ is really a descendance, that is the Transcendence of Humanity into Eternal Darkness. Descendance is to lower oneself in status or dignity, and to sink in condition in transitive senses. It is a descent into the mind of the devil and is the direct opposite of being in the mind of Christ (*1Co 2:16*). The people have a choice of Descendance or Ascendance.

As the demonic forces of Zionism/Freemasonry/Communism/Islam continue their assault on God’s creation, they are using a system called ‘Terra forming’ which is spraying the atmosphere with chemicals in what is universally identified as ‘chem-trails.’ Their objective among other things is to contaminate the land so that only their seeds and substances can be used to grow their kind of controlled foods. I have actually met farmers who have been fined large amounts of money for using their own propagated seed instead of purchasing and using Monsanto’s genetically modified seed. The effects of the chemtrails can only be negated by burning the elements in the atmosphere. Saint Peter affirms this: “The day of the Lord shall come as a thief, in which the heavens shall pass away with great violence and the elements shall be melted with heat and the earth and the works which are in it shall be burnt up. Seeing then that all these things are to be dissolved, what manner of people ought you to be in holy conversation and godliness?”

Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of the Lord, by which the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with the burning heat?" (2P 3:10-12).

So, when the fifth vial is poured out, the kingdom of the multinationals, the globalists, the technology depended rulers and public is wiped out. They are rendered impotent. We must always rely on the gift given to us by Our Creator, of body, soul and spirit.

"And they blasphemed the God of Heaven, because of their pains and wounds, and did not penance for their works" (16:11).

Is it any wonder that the pride and greed and lust and anger and envy of evil man will blaspheme the God of Heaven for taking their gluttonous demonic machinations away from them. We thank God for rescuing His people.

"And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon that great river Euphrates and dried up the water thereof, that a way might be prepared for the kings from the rising of the sun" (16:12).

The sixth angel, the one who calls out 'man' to the final battle, now does his mighty act. To understand the spiritual meaning let us look at the origin of the *Euphrates*: "And a river went out of the place of pleasure to water Paradise, which from thence is divided into four heads...the fourth river is Euphrates...God made a covenant with Abram, saying: 'To your seed will I give this land, from the river to Egypt even to the great river Euphrates'" (*Gn 2:10,14; 15:18*). So the promise made to give the land to those who are in the faith (*Rm 4:16*) of 'faithful Abraham' (*Ga 3:9*), to the fourth river, (four in spiritual terms means universal, creation, complete). Since the enemy has conquered the earth, then God is going to take back the earth which He made, and give to His faithful people. '...Egypt' mystically stands for money, power, and Freemasonry. (I say Freemasonry, because one of their many symbols is the pyramid). *'The kings from the rising of the sun'* includes not only all the nations of the east, but also all nations of the earth, for the sun rises on every one of them, but especially in the Muslim world, who have the way prepared for them and are sent, backed and financed by the CIA and Zionist intelligence to make bloody massacre on all who hold to the truth of

Jesus Messiah, and who will not bow down to the decoy prophet Mohammad and the horrible teachings of his followers. The massacre in Syria, Lebanon and Iraq and the forced evacuations of Muslim refugees throughout Europe in particular and the USA to a large degree is proof of this.

The way is prepared for them to infiltrate the Christian nations, and to come and fight as one, against the God of Creation. The '*great river Euphrates and dried up the water thereof*' again signifies that God's grace is totally removed from the invaders.

“And I saw from the mouth of the dragon, and from the mouth of the beast, and from the mouth of the false prophet, three unclean spirits like frogs, for they are the spirits of Devils, working signs, and they go forth unto the kings of the whole earth, to gather them to battle against the great day of the Almighty God” (16:13,14).

The three frogs are Satan, Antichrist, and the False Prophet, that is Zionism, Freemasonry, Communism and Islam, united to make the last great stand against the Lord God Almighty. A *frog* leaps from one place to another, 'leapfrogs,' and so the evil ones send out their terrorists, undercover agents, clandestine operatives, secret and hidden armies, (*frogs*) throughout the earth, to bring havoc to nations, and to unite all evil together against those who support God. They *work signs*, bombings, highjackings, poison gas and air, to unite all evil to come together. We will see in verse 20, that these frogs come from the area of the Euphrates, that is, from the 'Unholy Alliance' in chapter 17.

However, consider for a moment the members of the 'Unholy Alliance.' In them we see the military might of Russia and China. In them we see the economic might of the Mid East Oil petro-dollars. In them we see the technology might of Japan. In them see the vast 'cheap' labor markets. In them see the real three frogs:-

1. military challenge,
2. economic challenge,
3. surplus manpower challenge:

who together use the united power of the Unholy Alliance.
These are pawns in the control of Zionism/Masonry/Communism.

“Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watches and keeps his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame. And he shall gather them together into a place which in Hebrew is called Armageddon” (16:15,16).

The third blessing of the Apocalypse is blessings for watching and being pure.

We must be aware, we must leave all ‘secret’ sins. ‘*Watches and keeps his garments.*’ We must watch and keep our garment lest we be not vigilant and so succumb to the heretical (and hysterical) preaching of false teachers, false prophets (Zionist Antichrist and Zionist false Prophet), and thereby loose our faith (*garment*) in the fulness of Jesus Truth. We must go to Confession, lest we be stripped of our garment (*naked*) of protection (God’s grace).

The meaning of *Armageddon* is, ‘the hill of rulers.’ Here the ‘rulers’ of darkness are also called ‘robbers.’ *Armageddon* is believed to be a corruption of Har Megiddo - the hill of Megiddo in Israel, and it is also known as Tel-el-Mutesellim (*Hill of the Ruler*). Whoever controlled this ‘hill’ ruled the entire area. The governments through Zionism, Freemasonry, and Communism control, devour and rob the people through exorbitant taxation and excessive interest rates. The devil has succeeded in depriving God of the tithing due to Him.

But what says the Lord Almighty about this? “Shall a man afflict God, for you afflict Me. And you have said: Wherein do we afflict Thee? In tithes and in firstfruits. And you are cursed with want, and you afflict Me, even the whole nation of you. Bring all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in My house, and try Me in this, saith the Lord if I open not unto you the flood-gates of Heaven, and pour you out a blessing even to abundance. And I will rebuke for your sakes the devourer, and he shall not spoil the fruit of your land neither shall the vine in the field be barren, saith the Lord of hosts.

“And all nations shall call you blessed, for you shall be a delightful land, saith the Lord of hosts. Your words have been unsufferable to Me, saith the Lord. And you have said: What have we spoken against Thee? You

have said: He labours in vain that serves God, and what profit is it that we have kept His ordinances, and that we have walked sorrowful before the Lord of hosts? Wherefore now we call the proud people happy, for they that work wickedness are built up, and they have tempted God and are preserved. Then they that feared the Lord, spoke every one with his neighbour and the Lord gave ear, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before Him for them that fear the Lord, and think on His Name. And they shall be My special possession, saith the Lord of hosts, in the day that I do judgment, and I will spare them, as a man spares his son that serves him. And you shall return, and shall see the difference between the just and the wicked, and between him that serves God, and him that serves him not” (*Mal 3:8-18*).

God continues to fight the final battle for our souls, for all the inhabitants of the earth participate for Him or against Him.

“And the seventh angel poured out his vial upon the air. And there came a great voice out of the Temple from the Throne, saying: ‘It is done.’ And there were lightnings, and voices, and thunders, and there was a great earthquake, such an one as never had been since men were upon the earth, such an earthquake, so great” (16:17,18).

As we saw in chapter 4, the *‘lightnings, and voices and thunders,’* are the expressed and foretold power of God Who shall come to render to the world of unbelievers their just reward. Here now is fulfilment, *‘it is done,’* as the cosmos is burnt with fire (*2P 3:10*), *the great earthquake* of ten quakes measuring ten on the Richer Scale, happens in ten different locations of the world, at the same time, *‘such an one as never had been since men were upon the earth, such an earthquake, so great.’*

‘The great earthquake,’ is to jolt man out of his denial of Jesus Eucharist; to shock him out of complacency of religious indifferentism; and to seek the truth which can only be found in the Seven Sacraments of the Church.

These *lightnings, voices, thunders and earthquake* in spiritual terms are Almighty God showing everyone in a flash of light, the state of his soul

as God sees it. So that as in an earthquake, each and every person on the planet will either repent and change their way of living, or deny God and cling to their life style of spiritual and eternal destruction.

“And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the Gentiles fell. And great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give her the cup of the wine of the indignation of His wrath” (16:19).

‘The great city was divided into three parts,’ which are:

1. Those who believe - true Christians.
2. Those who do not believe - Gentiles.
3. Those who are at enmity with Christ - Babylon.

The great city of those in #2 and #3 are the combined cities of evil - antichrists. The destruction of these cities of the ‘*Gentiles*’ that is ‘unbelievers,’ will be government, communications, and finance. In finance there are the three sources through which money flows into the world: 1. Commerce, 2. Industry, 3. Banking.

These three will fall. The seat of the power of the beast is darkened.

“And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found” (16:20).

‘*Every island fled away,*’ that is, every self justification for not believing in the fulness of Jesus, is exposed. There now is no excuse, and nothing to hide behind. ‘*The mountains were not found*’ that is, all the obstacles for not believing are wiped away. Now it is just man, Eucharistic man, who is Truth. This will be the moment when everyone alive will see their soul as God sees it. This is a time of great introspection and hopefully conversion.

This is the time when individual ‘churches’ of Neo-Roman Catholic ecumenical, Protestant, Orthodox, Coptic persuasions, as well as all the other false religions of Judaism, Muslim, Buddhism, etc., will see that they have set up their own ‘golden calf’ of idolatry, and will quickly abandon their heresies and seek to enter the True Faith, which is Eucharistic unity in Christ Jesus. This Eucharistic unity can only be found in the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church.

Understand that the devil is delighted with all the various religions as he continues to divide and conquer. This is especially true in the Protestant 'churches' where at least one new 'church' is started every day in at least some part of the world, but especially in the United States of America and Europe.

There is a continuing division among the Roman Catholics as opposition to the post Vatican II church and its 'popes' is expressed among a growing number of dissenters. There are new 'catholic churches' set up calling themselves 'The Latin Church,' or the 'American Catholic Church,' or the 'Traditional Catholic Church,' and the list goes on and on.

All of these break-a-ways are nothing more than the golden calf of idolatry set up by ego maniacs at the suggestion of Satan. These are the *unclean spirits like frogs, for they are the spirits of Devils, working signs*, and are all the islands which will flee away at the arrival of the wrath of God. Rebellion from Truth is devil worship, sorcery and wizardry, while presumption of religious righteousness outside of the Church is idolatry. What will those people say when Jesus will say to them at Judgement? "Many will say to Me in that day: Lord, Lord, have not we prophesied in Thy Name, and cast out devils in Thy Name, and done many miracles in Thy Name? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you. Depart from Me, you that work iniquity" (*Mt 7:22,23*).

Individual churches and nations will not be able to exist. People who say: "I have an arrangement with God," will find out that God has an arrangement for them. No man is an *island* unto himself, so those who think otherwise - beware! Jesus said: "What I say to you, I say to all: Watch!" (*Mk 13:37*).

"And great hail, like a talent, came down from Heaven upon men, and men blasphemed God, for the plague of the hail, because it was exceeding great" (16:21).

'Great hail' is the realized truth of Jesus Christ the Rock, come down like a bolt in the minds of all who oppose God. Jesus still seeks conversions. He pours out His grace upon all mankind, yet so many

oppose His help and seek the temporary and easy compromise of the evil one, not knowing the heavy weight it puts on their eternal soul.

'A talent' weighs some 80 pounds, or 36 kilograms. I believe it would take a very big and strong umbrella to have shelter from this weight! In the spiritual realm the number '8' means that there will be a new beginning, as God will bring to Divine perfection '3', the whole creation of '6' man, through His judgement, '9', (which is the sum of 3+6). Yes, and the umbrella is the protection of God given to His children, Eucharistic man. The Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church is the umbrella.

'Men blasphemed God, for the plague of the hail' - they blasphemed the rock of Truth.

Chapter 17

The great harlot. Scarlet beast. Seven kings

“And there came one of the seven angels who had the seven vials and spoke with me, saying: ‘Come, I will show you the condemnation of the great harlot, who sits upon many waters, with whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication. And they who inhabit the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her whoredom” (17:1,2).

The ‘*great harlot*’ is the evil combination of the political, economic, academic, and ecclesiastical systems under the banner of Freemasonry, Zionism, Communism and Islam. It covers the entire earth (*many waters*), with the only exception being the Eucharistic Church which condemns the above mentioned unions. ‘*The kings of the earth*’ are the false religious, political and financial leaders in each country.

‘*Committed fornication*’ is twofold, first is the apostasy from the True Church, and second the selling of their soul for filthy lucre (*money gained dishonorably*), in order to get position, and power, easily seen in the hierarchy of all churches, and politicians, and the concealed financial and business manipulations. ‘*They who inhabit the earth*’ are those citizens who obey and follow the False Prophet and the Antichrist, both of whom are Zionist Jews whom we saw earlier. ‘*Drunk with the wine of her whoredom*’ have aided and abetted the evil by willingly accepting and promoting the errors of ecumenism and compromise with political correctness, false money (crypto-currencies) and false economics.

“And he took me away in spirit into the desert. And I saw a woman sitting upon a scarlet colored beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns” (17:3).

We saw in chapter 13 that the Antichrist has ‘*seven heads*’ complete headship or supremacy over the whole world. The *seven heads*, upon each of which there is a crown, are signs of authority and royalty. This power and authority are the weapons of the seven kings, who have established laws through physical force and devious practices to achieve their ideological, political, and military power, which in turn uses wars, torture, cruelty, and blood, as instruments of their supremacy. The ‘*ten horns*’ means that the beast has complete and full authority to make his

commands heard, and obeyed, throughout the entire world.

'The desert' is the Zionist apostate world of the supporters of Antichrist and is devoid of the Holy Trinity of God the Father, Jesus Christ His Only Begotten Son, and God the Holy Ghost. The apostate world is the desert of sin and dis-grace.

The *'scarlet colored beast'* signifies royal power, gained by bloodshed and tyranny. Here in the spiritual sense it also means the filthiest of all sinful beings. It is recorded: "Learn to do well, seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge for the fatherless, defend the widow, and then come, and accuse Me, says the Lord. If your sins be as scarlet, they shall be made as white as snow, and if they be red as crimson, they shall be white as wool. If you be willing, and will hearken to Me, you shall eat the good things of the land. But if you will not, and will provoke Me to wrath, the sword shall devour you, because the mouth of the Lord has spoken it" (*Is 1:17-20*). The Lord has called repeatedly for all, rich and poor, bondman and free, Gentile and Jew, to return to Him. So many do not listen, do not want to pay the price for eternal happiness, but rather they choose temporary comfort, being fooled by devilish Masonic craft, only to end up in eternal horrors.

'I saw a woman' and which here is the mother of harlots, that is the combined forces of the power of government, economic, religious, and the communications media, to lead the world into bondage to the kingdom of Zion which is in opposition to the Kingdom of God, that is the Kingship of Christ.

"And the woman was clothed round about with purple and scarlet, and gilt with gold, and precious stones, and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand, full of the abomination and filthiness of her fornication" (17:4).

Here the *purple and scarlet, gold*, signify riches and expensive attire, having dominion over the entire earth, living and working in lavish government buildings (*stones and pearls*). These have been attained by fornicating her soul (*abomination and filthiness*) thereby oppressing the poor and feeble, old and sick, in order to gain her temporary power and

accolades from all Satanic people.

And on her forehead a name was written: 'A mystery: Babylon the great, the mother of the fornications and the abominations of the earth.' "
(17:5).

In the Roman Empire, the leaders wore a gold band on their foreheads signifying their position of prestige, so here is the public declaration of the authority of Satan. The 'mystery' is the united tyranny of Zionism, Freemasonry, Communism and Islam in Totalitarianism. 'Babylon' would indicate that this city is Rome (1P 5:13), the seat of the Old Roman Empire, and by The Treaty of Rome (the European Union) which was signed on 25 March 1958, as we saw in 13:5. In reality, the USA has become the seat of Satan (2:12), and from the dictates of the United Nations, the Zionist control over the whole world is absolute.

"And I saw the woman drunk with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus. And I wondered, when I had seen her, with great admiration" (17:6).

We saw in 9:1 that the star which fell from heaven and had the key of the bottomless pit was the Bishop of Rome, the second John XXIII. Through his programs he caused many to revolt from truth and join 'ecumenism.' It is over 50 years since that fateful council, and so many have lost the meaning of sin and in conjunction with other religions of error, they are willing to 'fight for their religious freedom' against those who would uphold the teachings of the Ten Commandments and the Seven Sacraments as taught in original Catholicism. The 'woman' through the medium of radio, television, newspapers, and movies, stage, and song, will enforce the errors. The 'world' has accepted the teachings of false prophets, false teachers, and these have led many innocent people into practicing error, false idols (politicians, movie stars, sports, etc), and destruction: "My people perish for a want of knowledge" (Is 5:13). 'Drunk with the blood of the saints' are all the people of the world who have suffered persecution and great trials for their faith in Jesus Christ, no matter what continent or country. Saint John 'wondered with great admiration' at how easily the 'woman' gained such control, especially in Rome where evil conquered the structure of the once Holy Roman Catholic Church, while the politicians captured the social and

economic life of the world.

And the angel said to me: 'Why do you wonder? I will tell you the mystery of the woman, and of the beast which carries her, which has the seven heads and ten horns' (17:7).

Petrus Romanus (*the angel*) tells Saint John that he will tell him the meaning of the woman by breaking it down into three distinct parts:

- 1). The mystery of the woman, all the wicked, who make up one city,
- 2). The mystery of the beast which carries her, and
- 3). The mystery of the seven heads and ten horns.

"The beast which you saw, was, and is not, and shall come up out of the bottomless pit, and go into destruction. And the inhabitants on the earth (whose names are not written in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world) shall wonder, seeing the beast that was and is not" (17:8).

The atrocities committed by the Roman emperors and their empire earned them an immediate place in the flames of Hell. Remember that the old Roman Empire included Israel - the 'kingdom of Israel.' It is commonly assumed that the revival of the Roman Empire by the European Union, is the '*beast which was, and is not, and shall come up out of the bottomless pit,*' yet the end of it is to '*go into destruction.*' This 'beast' includes the Jews who handed over Jesus Christ to the Romans and demanded Him to be crucified. Pilate said to the Jews: "What shall I do then with Jesus that is called Christ?" They say all: "Let Him be crucified." Then Pilate said to them: "Why, what evil has He done?" "But they cried the more saying: "Let Him be crucified...His Blood be upon us and upon our children" (*Mt 27:22-25*).

There is a great outcry from the Zionist Jews when they are accused of crucifying Jesus Christ. They are most indignant and grossly insulted. Scripture records, and Sacred Scripture cannot be denied: "Ye men of Israel, hear these words: Jesus of Nazareth, a Man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by Him, in the midst of you, as you also know, this same being delivered up, by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, you by the hands of wicked men have crucified and slain...Therefore let all the house of Israel know most certainly that God has made both Lord and Christ, this

same Jesus, Whom you have crucified...Be it known to you all and to all the people of Israel, that by the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, Whom you crucified, Whom God has raised from the dead, even by Him, this man stands here before you, whole...The God of our fathers has raised up Jesus, Whom you put to death, hanging Him upon a tree...Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? And they have slain them who foretold of the coming of the Just One, of Whom you have been now the betrayers and murderers...And we are witnesses of all things that He did in the land of the Jews and in Jerusalem: Whom they killed, hanging Him upon a tree” (Ac 2:22,23,26; 4:10; 5:30; 7:52; 10:39). “When the chief priests, therefore, and the servants had seen Him (*Jesus*), they cried out, saying: Crucify Him, Crucify Him” (Jn 19:6).

Having recorded all of this, let me admonish all people, that we all have crucified Jesus by our own sins. When He foresaw all our sins in the Garden of Gethsemane, “His sweat became as drops of blood, trickling down upon the ground” (Lk 22:44). So let us not be smug or high and mighty, for we too are guilty.

Do not be fooled by the EU and the Western Alliance, as the Devil is using them as a decoy as he amasses the troops of the ‘kingdom of Zion’ to confront and destroy the Kingdom of God. Therefore the *‘beast which was, and is not,’* is the Devil in his Zionist empire who has come up out of the bottomless pit as we saw in 9:1! While he uses the Antichrist nation of Israel to promote and agitate wars in the Middle East and around the world, he uses London, Brussels, Rome, New York, Washington, Moscow, Beijing and Switzerland to manipulate Zionist inspired political and economic chaos. Notice the seven cities which are all connected in one way or another to the one country!

“And here is the understanding that has wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, upon which the woman sits, and they are seven kings” (17:9).

In the spiritual sense, when we commit any of the seven deadly sins (*seven heads*), we sit on our *mountain* of pride, joined to the king of the filth which we have committed, and unless we avail ourselves of the

Holy Sacrament of Confessions, we go to eternal destruction.

The *woman* is the system, sponsored by the kingdom of Zion, supported by the United Nations, which in turn is supported by the nations of the world.

The *seven mountains* here are forms of governments, and their rulers who here are called *kings*. The *seven hills* are also a referral to Rome which sits on *seven hills*, and which as we saw have revived the fallen Roman empire in the twentieth century with Zionist money and intrigue, and is growing in monstrous iniquitous proportions in this the twenty-first century throughout the world through the Masonic/Zionist controlled UN.

“Five are fallen, one is, and the other is not yet come, and when he is come, he must remain a short time, and the beast which was and is not, the same also is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goes into destruction” (17:10,11).

The different systems of government having control over the world are listed below. The eighth is listed, and this is the sly one to watch out for. He is at this very time amalgamating his power into a few ‘alliances.’

Let us here understand that the seven kings are types of governments, and a collage of them is the eighth.

The predominate political types of government structures are:-

1. Democracy: A form of government in which the people have a voice in the exercise of power, typically through elected representatives, who unfortunately only pretend honesty.

2. Monarchy: A government by a monarch, king or queen. In spite of their facade, they usually manipulate the kingdom for their own personal gain.

3. Imperialism: A policy of extending a country’s power and influence through colonization, use of military force, financial manipulation, sabotage, and any other means which suit their purposes.

4. Communism: A political and social system whereby all property is owned by the community, and each person contributes and receives

according to their ability and needs. The most notable systems of this kind (which are derived from Marxism), are practiced in China and the Russian states. Heretics and anti-christs are the usual rulers these systems vomit into control. The results of these governments is Leninist terrorism through control, sabotage, blackmail, suspicion, secret societies which incarcerate and exterminate citizens who even try to oppose the system.

5. Theocracy: A system of government in which priests rule in the name of God or a god. Moses, Samuel, and for a short period of time Saint Peter, were among the few true types of Theocracies in the history of the world. The present 'theocracy' practiced in Iran is a true form of 'priests' (*mullahs*), ruling and terrorizing in the name of a false god, but you must know that the mullahs are heretics.

6. Oligarchy: A system in which a small group of people have control of a country or state. This group have one object in mind, power and control at any cost. Zionism which controls all the money of the world is a prime example of oligarchy.

7. Dictatorship: A government run by one person. His authoritarian rule will accept no compromise, no advice, no God. All of the dictator's opponents 'disappear.'

8. Zionism: Zionism also known as Satanism is the eighth, and it is of the seven types of government named above. Zionism finances through manipulation, revolution and deceit, all governments of the world, including the religious institutions through it's control of all banking institutions. It is the most sinister of all the evils of the world. It is the first and controlling part of the 'six' in the 666.

Satan (*Zionism*) must keep control of the whole world, and in order to do this he creates 'enemies' and 'fear,' and has each country create an army and weapons, which cost money - financed by the Zionists, and this money is taken from the citizens (taxpayers), and as more destructive weapons are created, more taxation must be imposed on the people so that eventually they are reduced to slavery to the money system (*Zionism*). Zionism through the power of money and massive populations, wages war against humanity, especially Catholic Christianity, using sabotage, famine, and all acts of terrorism, as it leads the world into the Great Tribulation, by seeking it's objective of

totalitarianism.

Zionism is the upshot, and the objective from the beginning of the evil one to control the world. As we said before, Masonry and Communism have spread their wicked network throughout all the earth, in every nation, in every church, and synagogue, and language, but Zionism has infiltrated each one of them and is at this date the master of them all.

The seventh king is the Antichrist, *'the other is not yet come, and when he is come, he must remain a short time,'* which we saw in 9:11; 13:1-10. When he is defeated and cast into the hell of fire and brimstone, then the devil himself must come out and fight openly.

'The beast which was and is not, the same also is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goes into destruction' is the devil himself through Zionism, who was roaming the world without much hindrance until Jesus Christ came and bound him for 'a thousand years' that is for a long time. During that thousand years the devil was very much restricted by the Catholic priestly exorcisms and the Holy Sacrament of Confession, and the valid reception of Holy Eucharist. Under the pontificate of the second John XXIII he was released, and has set himself up as the 'eighth' in the event that the seventh king fails. The Antichrist does fail, and now the 'eighth' king, the devil himself, *goes into destruction*, that is, he is cast into the Hell of fire and brimstone forever.

"And the ten horns which you saw are ten kings, who have not yet received a kingdom, but shall receive power as kings, one hour after the beast. These have one design, and their strength and power they shall deliver to the beast" (17:12,13).

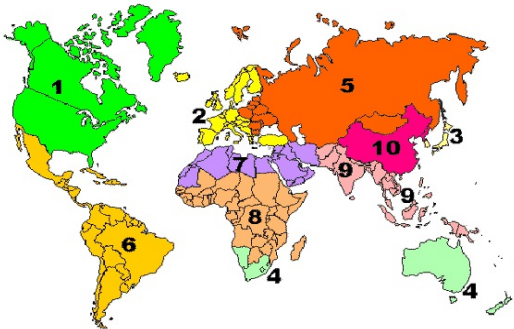
The number '10' is order, perfection, fullness. The *'ten horns are ten kings'* and this represents all the rulers of the nations at the time of Antichrist using the power (*horns*) given them, but this power is short lived (*one hour*). They are as of 2019 doing his bidding through the United Nations Assembly.

The Ten Kingdoms come more into focus now with the establishment of the Club of Rome which is a global think tank that deals with

‘international political issues.’ It was founded in 1968 at David Rockefeller’s estate in Bellagio, Italy, and in 2008 moved its headquarters to Winterthur, Switzerland. The Club describes itself as “a group of world citizens, sharing a common concern for the future of humanity.” This ‘concern’ is to implement the future enslavement of humanity. (David Rockefeller, since deceased, was one of the select members of the Zionist clique).

The Club divides the world into ten economic regions, which the United Nations and the Club of Rome call “The Ten Kingdoms.” These ten regions (kingdoms) have ten rulers. The ten kingdoms (regions) are ruled by ‘kings,’ who are ‘bankers’ appointed by the rulers of money (Zionists). The Club’s task is to oversee and control the ten kingdoms in all of it’s activities: religious, economic and social orders. In other words, they have total control of the sovereignty of every country of the world. They are the handpicked of the Zionists who control all the money of the world. The ten kings (rulers) are subject to the money, as “all things obey money” (*Ec 10:19*).

Here is how the ‘ten kingdoms’ are set up:



1. United States, Canada and Greenland.
2. The European Union (EU), Western Europe including Turkey.
3. Japan.
4. Australia, New Zealand, South Africa.
5. Eastern Europe, Pakistan, Afghanistan, Russia and former Soviet Union countries, which along with India, Venezuela, Brazil make up

the main countries of the Unholy Alliance

6. Central and South America, Cuba and Caribbean Islands.
7. The Middle East and North Africa.
8. The rest of Africa, except South Africa.
9. South and Southeast Asia, including India.
10. China, and the islands of the seas closest to it.

At the present time, the United Nations (UN) is the overseer of the 'ten kingdoms,' under the watchful eye of their Zionist masters. So, the Zionist 'Club of Rome' has (in it's own eyes) set up perfect order in it's government. It gives kingship, authority, to various nations under it's 'club' with certain powers and functions. Their end is written as they make the big mistake - they forget God, the Great "I AM WHO AM...HE WHO IS" (*Ex 3:14*).

"These shall fight with the Lamb. And the Lamb shall overcome them because He is Lord of lords, and King of kings, and they that are with Him are called, and elect, and faithful" (17:14).

The 'called, and elect, and faithful' is Eucharistic man. These shall overcome the Zionist/Masonry/Communist/Islamic Alliances, "not with an army, nor by might, but by My Spirit, says the Lord of Hosts" (*Zc 4:6*). They live in Holy Eucharist, that is, they are living in the power of the Blood of the Lamb.

The errors of Masonry, Zionism, Communism and Islam, have penetrated every church in Christendom, as these evils join the Zionist cry of vengeance against Christ the King of All Nations with the devilish declaration: "We have no king but Caesar" (*Jn 19:15*). Communists have set up the Unholy Alliance and will undoubtedly fight against their rulers - the Freemasons and Zionists. "Behold, I will bring of the synagogue of Satan, who say they are Jews and are not, but do lie" (*Apoc 3:9*).

"And he said to me: 'The waters which you saw, where the harlot sits, are peoples, and nations, and tongues. And the ten horns which you saw in the beast, these shall hate the harlot, and shall make her desolate, and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and shall burn her with fire. For God has

given into their hearts to do that which pleases Him, that they give their kingdom to the beast, till the words of God be fulfilled” (17:15,16,17).

The *waters* are the United Nations.

The *harlot* is the political/economic/social system.

The *ten horns* are the rulers of the nations.

The end of the ‘Unholy Alliance’ is internal fighting, Muslim against Communism, African against Asian, etc., all fight against each other in the total destruction of those in the Unholy and Western Alliance. The biggest fight of all is Zionism money against Masonic/Communist governing rule. Zionism controls the economic wealth of all the nations of the world. Freemasonry/Communism controls the governing power of all the nations of the Western and Unholy Alliance. These will fight to the death, that is the death of each other, as we saw above: ‘*God has given into their hearts to do that which pleases Him.*’

“And the woman which you saw is the great city which has kingdom over the kings of the earth” (17:18).

The great city is the United Nations which is under the absolute control of the Zionist money in the Zionist/Masonry/Communism troika.

Chapter 18

Fall of Babylon, kings and merchants

“And after these things, I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power, and the earth was enlightened with his glory” (18:1).

The ‘*great power*’ which this angel has is to collapse the financial systems of the world. The Zionist manipulators of the money for the evil forces make every effort to sustain ‘*market stability*’ but are unable to succeed in their goals. He comes ‘*down from heaven,*’ that is from the Eucharistic Church with temporal power, and has as part of his duties the overseeing of the systems of the worldly man. The angel *enlightens* those who will listen on the earth with his insight, and ability to lead people to follow God. His ‘*glory*’ is his prophetic gift and miraculous powers.

“And he cried out with a strong voice, saying: ‘Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every unclean spirit, and the hold of every unclean and hateful bird” (18:2).

This Eucharistic man uses his ‘*strong voice*’ that is, his power to override the restrictive communication systems which is reserved for the antichrist forces, and calls Babylon for what it is, ‘*the habitation of devils.*’ He proclaims to the entire universe that Antichrist is hiding under the cover of Zionism, Masonry, Communism, Islam, ecclesiastical ecumenism, state ‘*religionists,*’ and other cultist operators, such as the ‘*politically correct,*’ and the habitation of those who love sin.

Babylon is fallen is also a note of hope to the very few Eucharistic people who pray for the conversion of the great multitude of sinners, some of whom do convert, while the Babylon of their sin collapses.

“because all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth have been made rich by the power of her delicacies” (18:3).

The 'nations' include the traders and sellers who promoted the merchandise of filth and excessive profits, at the expense of the vulnerable and poor.

“And I heard another voice from heaven, saying: ‘Go out from her, my people, that you be not partakers of her sins and that you receive not of her plagues’” (18:4).

A bishop of the Eucharistic Church pleads with all the citizens of the earth to leave the compromise of sin and ecumenism before it is too late, as the destruction of Babylon is imminent. The cry from heaven to the members of 'Christianity' and all people of whatever religion they belong, to leave Babylon, because destitution and destruction are coming to her. All are warned to leave it now, or partake in the downfall which is at it's doorstep. They are encouraged to seek true shelter in the Eucharistic Church.

“For her sins have reached unto Heaven, and the Lord has remembered her iniquities” (18:5).

The bishop is prophesying what he has heard from God, and is foretelling what is about to happen. Jesus said: “When he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will teach you all truth. For he shall not speak of himself, but what things soever he shall hear, he shall speak, and the things that are to come, he shall show you” (*Jn 16:13*).

“Render to her as she also has rendered to you, and double unto her double, according to her works. In the cup wherein she has mingled, mingle ye double unto her” (18:6).

Here is the irreversible order to the licentious citizens of Babylon to drink the *cup* of retribution which they poured out for others, and now they must suffer *double* for their sins. This is not a command for the faithful to execute punishment, but for sinful man - the kingdom of Zion - to drink his own condemnation of poverty, starvation, thirst, hunger, sickness, homelessness and so on.

“as much as she has glorified herself and lived in delicacies, so much torment and sorrow give ye to her. Because she said in her heart: ‘I sit a queen and am no widow, and sorrow I shall not see’” (18:7).

As the Zionist power-mongers of Satan have increased their positions of luxury at the expense of the poor and helpless, so now the power and glory of God in His poor, is going to eliminate the position of the evil ones, at the expense of their luxury. In their arrogance they thought themselves invincible, but now, their end has come, and what awaits them is anguish, humiliation, total destitution before they die a horrible death.

“Therefore, shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine. And she shall be burnt with the fire, because God is strong, Who shall judge her” (18:8).

The impending disaster which is coming will happen on a sudden, ‘*in one day.*’ There will be no warning, there will be no escape. The evil rulers of politics, economics, religion, and ‘education,’ have their plans in place to avert downfall, but they will not prevail. There will be an immediate fourfold impact of ‘*death, and mourning, and famine...and fire,*’ as they suffer the wrath of God, Who shall *judge*. The rulers of the world of darkness will be destroyed with amazing swiftness, they cannot fight against God and win!

We will see that this ‘*time*’ is decreased to ‘*one hour*’ in the next two sections, which is an indication of just how rapidly all will happen and be destroyed.

We all have our own personal ‘*Babylons,*’ and when we see the hand of God protecting His creation, our personal Babylon will collapse ‘*in one day.*’

“And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived in delicacies with her, shall weep and bewail themselves over her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning (18:9).

‘*The kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived in delicacies with her*’ are the Zionists and their lackeys who have denied God’s ‘gold standard’ as a means of fair trading and accounting, and replaced it with a floating system of currencies, with its never ending spiral of debt, inflation, and crooked manipulation of national monies, in order to achieve ‘instant gratification’ for their unruly appetites.

The ‘financial experts and advisors’ used the floating currency system, to increase taxes to the poor, making it impossible for a family to exist on one salary, thus forcing both mother and father to work, in order to maintain the home. This caused the breakdown of the family, undisciplined and unruly children, abandonment of ‘keeping holy the Sabbath Day,’ and the decay of whole societies, and generations. Now they must pay for their *‘delicacies...and shall weep and bewail themselves over her.*

“standing afar off for fear of her torments, saying: ‘Alas! alas! that great city, Babylon, that mighty city, for in one hour is your judgment come’” (18:10).

The kings, rulers, and ‘leaders’ of the countries and churches and televangelists, *‘stand afar off’* thinking of their former ‘instant gratification,’ as they hope to escape the ‘instant displeasure,’ which they see as a certitude, while they are overcome with fear.

We saw previously that everything happens swiftly - *in one day* - and this day is a day in God’s time, which will seem like an eternity to the condemned, now it is reduced to *‘one hour.’*

“And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her, for no man shall buy their merchandise any more” (18:11).

In the previous verse the kings and rulers mourned in agony. What happens when ‘credit’ is gone? Now the merchants and wholesalers and distributors suffer the wrath of God. Before when they charged the poor exorbitant prices for the basic essentials, and insisted *‘hurt not the wine and the oil’* of their luxuries (*Apoc 6:6*), now the poor who know how to live in poverty, are joined by those who are total strangers and who know not how to live in poverty, and for these newcomers to destitution there is a double disaster of humility and ignorance.

“merchandise of gold and silver and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple and silk and scarlet, and all thyme wood, and all manner of vessels of ivory, and all manner of vessels of precious stone, and of brass, and of iron and of marble” (18:12).

The financial stock markets around the world collapse. No more fancy

accounting by the 'big firms' can help them. There is no money to buy goods and services. Their funny money of 'quantitative easing' has dried up as nations refuse to accept useless empty promissory notes. The invincible stock indices which had been supported by frantic manipulation, crumble. In this verse is mentioned the various types or categories of the stock markets around the globe. Here all is lost as the crash day of reckoning is come.

“and cinnamon and odours, and ointment and frankincense, and wine and oil, and fine flour and wheat, and beasts and sheep, and horses and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men” (18:13).

Here the commodities markets are mentioned, but in particular are 'slaves, and souls of men' who have had to work in most humiliating situations, giving their bodies as slaves to sex traffickers. All of this is a result of unjust taxation which made 'slaves' of men.

I therefore accuse the governments of the world for knowingly allowing the abduction of children for the sexual abuse by the 'rich and powerful,' and in many instances to have themselves been the perpetrators of such inhuman acts. I particularly accuse the Government of the United States of America who use their Department of Child Protective Services to 'legally' take children from their parents and put them in 'foster homes' of known child abusers. I further accuse them of murdering public elected officials in the State of Georgia for investigating and bringing the cases of known criminal acts out in the open. The children were made the 'slaves' and the souls of the parents were distressed to the point of despair.

“And the fruits of the desire of your soul are departed from you, and all fat and goodly things are perished from you, and they shall find them no more at all” (18:14).

Hardship has set in for the former elegant who lived on delicacies and self indulgences. Such living is not now available, and the new experience of want is crushing and humiliating. There is no way to acquire those 'things' and want and defeat are the new existence for the one-time proud.

“The merchants of these things, who were made rich, shall stand afar off from her, for fear of her torments, weeping and mourning” (18:15).

The commodity markets around the world collapse. The warning was given with pleading encouragement: “But seek ye first the Kingdom of God and His justice, and all these things shall be added unto you. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also” (*Lk 12:31,34*). Where will the ‘merchants’ turn now? How will they buy food? Where will they live as they have lost their homes? They lost their treasure, they are now truly ‘broken-hearted.’

“and saying: ‘Alas! alas! that great city, which was clothed with fine linen, and purple and scarlet, and was gilt with gold and precious stones and pearls” (18:16).

‘Alas!’ This weary expression of grief and self-pity for what had been is the pathetic cry and lament for the opulent life that was. Now all is lost forever. *“for in one hour are so great riches come to nought” (18:17a)*. How quickly came the unexpected collapse. There was no time to plan for the unthinkable and unforeseeable.

“And every shipmaster and all that sail into the lake, and mariners, and as many as work in the sea, stood afar off” (18:17b).

The transport markets around the world have collapsed, not just the seaways, but also the road networks, the airways and the airwaves. The markets have dried up, so there is no need for transporters of unwanted goods. There is no one to fly on the airplanes, or sail the luxury liners. The airports, all ports and harbors are closed or destroyed.

“and cried, seeing the place of her burning, saying: ‘What city is like to this great city?’ (18:18).

They cried as their ‘god’ is destroyed. The haunt of the ‘indestructible kingdom of Zion,’ the Zionist/Masonic/Communist/Islamic system is gone.

“And they cast dust upon their heads and cried, weeping and mourning, saying: ‘Alas! alas! that great city, wherein all were made rich, that had ships at sea, by reason of her prices. For, in one hour she is made desolate” (18:19).

'They cast dust upon their heads,' that is, they became totally destitute, their means of livelihood had vanished. *'Alas! alas!'* their concern is painful. Now comes the time of the life or death choice for the once proud and mighty. Will they choose to continue to hope for a 'fix' of the system? Will they choose to turn their back on a dead system? How will they treat being made desolate? Will they now choose to follow God? "O death your sentence is welcome to the man that is in need, and to him whose strength fails" (*Si 41:3*).

"Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles, and prophets, for God has judged your judgment on her" (*18:20*).

The patience and perseverance by the Eucharistic Church, which is the entire Mystical Body of Christ, Church Triumphant in Heaven, Church Militant on earth, and Church Suffering in Purgatory, are victorious in collapsing the Satanic Zionist/Masonic/Communist/Islamic system. In this rejoicing, Eucharistic man prays for those who are now in great tribulation, for they are in grave danger of Hell, and by their intercessory prayers, they may still save many from eternal damnation.

"And a mighty angel took up a stone, as it were a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying: 'With such violence as this, shall Babylon, that great city, be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all'" (*18:21*).

The *'mighty angel'* is that individual Eucharistic man, the Great Monarch Petrus Romanus. Here he shows the power of God, and shatters the economic power of Zionism on the rocks. He shows also that the manipulative power of Freemasonry in 'fixing' governments with systems and 'fail-safe' measures are totally destroyed. Atheistic Communism is defeated and will no more spread her errors. The absolute destruction of all modern technology is accomplished. The 'wipe out' of all sinful luxuries is complete. Remember that Jesus said: "He that shall scandalize one of these little ones that believe in Me, it were better for him that a millstone should be hanged about his neck, and that he should be drowned in the depth of the sea" (*Mt 18:6*). The search for survival is the predominant thought in all minds. Will they turn to God? He told them what was to come next. Will they believe? The great deception has ended. God's Will has been done.

“And the voice of harpers and of musicians and of them that play on the pipe and on the trumpet, shall no more be heard at all in you, and no craftsman of any art whatsoever, shall be found any more at all in you, and the sound of the mill shall be heard no more at all in you” (18:22).

All the means of the self indulgent are taken away. All the means to delude the people of reality are gone. *‘The voice of harpers and of musicians and of them that play on the pipe and on the trumpet,’* are the false churches, false prophets and false teachers: “For there are also many disobedient, vain talkers and seducers: especially they who are of the circumcision who must be reprov’d, who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucre’s sake” (*IT 1:10,11*). This also includes the movie and music industries with their vile language, horrible lyrics and satanic gestures. These have set up their own god and goddesses of impurity and iniquity.

“and the light of the lamp shall shine no more at all in you, and the voice of the bridegroom and the bride, shall be heard no more at all in you. For your merchants were the great men of the earth, for all nations have been deceived by your enchantments” (18:23).

Those who denied the Light of Christ will now have no light at all.

“And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth” (18:24).

The blood of the prophets are not only those who have been martyred, but also those who have been subjected to abject poverty, or homelessness, or deprived of the very essentials of shelter, food, water, and medical care. “The chief thing for man’s life is water and bread, and clothing, and a house to cover shame” (*Si 29:27*). In them were also found those who had been tortured, imprisoned, persecuted, deprived, starved and hated. The poor suffered in want, while the rich lived sumptuously in opulence. Jesus said: “Love your enemies, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them that persecute and calumniate you” (*Mt 5:44*).

We must still pray for all to be saved.

Chapter 19

Chapter 19

Marriage Feast of the Lamb

“After these things, I heard as it were the voice of much people in heaven, saying: ‘Alleluia. Salvation, and glory, and power, is to our God. For true and just are His judgments, Who has judged the great harlot which corrupted the earth with her fornication, and has revenged the blood of His servants, at her hands.’ And again they said: ‘Alleluia.’ And her smoke ascends for ever and ever. And the four and twenty ancients, and the four living creatures, fell down and adored God that sits upon the Throne, saying: ‘Amen. Alleluia!’” (19:1-4).

Here the entire Church rejoice! It is necessary to restate that Heaven is joined to earth in Eucharistic union, and the ‘heaven’ here is the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church. The saints on earth, that is the ‘Church Militant’ are joined with the saints who have gone before them, the ‘Church Triumphant.’ These billions of people are ‘*the voice of much people.*’

‘*Her smoke ascends*’ indicates that the destruction of Babylon with its lies and errors is so complete that all that is left of her is smoke, which vanishes, ‘*for ever and ever.*’

‘*The four and twenty ancients, and the four living creatures*’ are the hierarchy in which the duties and responsibilities of the Old and New Testaments are transferred and fulfilled in the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church in Eucharistic man, as we saw in Chapter 4. The ‘*four living creatures*’ are Eucharistic man, having authority over God’s creation, and with that power and authority has united in himself the fulness of God’s creatures.

In short, Holy Eucharist is victorious, ‘*Amen. Alleluia!*’”

“And a voice came out from the Throne, saying: ‘Give praise to our God, all ye His servants, and you that fear Him, little and great.’ And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many

Chapter 19

waters, and as the voice of great thunders, saying: 'Alleluia, for the Lord our God, the Almighty, has reigned, let us be glad and rejoice, and give glory to Him, for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and His wife has prepared herself. And it is granted to her that she should clothe herself with fine linen, glittering and white. For the fine linen are the justifications of saints' (19:5-8).

The voice from the Throne is Petrus Romanus, the Monarch. The united voices of praise is for the glory of God and for His leading the people safely through the 'Red Sea' of the last day. The *Marriage Feast* is being prepared. We, Eucharistic man, angels and saints are granted the most splendid honor and privilege of clothing ourselves in '*fine linen, glittering and white.*' This '*fine linen*' is the linen with which Jesus was wrapped in the Tomb after His death (*Mk 15:46*). It is the garment for the Wedding Feast, as the 'old man' has died to self. This is the glory of the Eucharistic union of God in man, and man in God.

There are those who think that because of their position and riches, that they can buy their way into the feast. Let us remember here the parable which Jesus told: "The King went in to see the guests, and He saw there a man who had not on a wedding garment, and He said to him: 'Friend, how came you in here not having on a wedding garment?' But he was silent. Then the King said to the waiters: 'Bind his hands and feet, and cast him into the exterior darkness. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. For many are called, but few are chosen'" (*Mt 22:11-14*). Think about this for a moment; to be cast out into the exterior darkness is one thing, but to be bound hand and feet and then cast out into the exterior darkness completely helpless is simply terrifying!

We must be ready, and we must be prepared to bring as many people as possible to truth so that they too can enter into the Eucharistic Feast of Oneness with God. The '*wedding garment*' is an immaculate soul.

"And he said to me: 'Write: Blessed are they that are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb.' And he said to me: 'These words of God are true'" (19:9).

This is the fourth blessing of the Apocalypse fulfilled in those who have

Chapter 19

believed in Holy Eucharist.

The call has gone out to the whole world. Eucharistic man has called from the ends of the earth for all to get ready and come to the Living Waters (*Ps 60:3*). Eucharistic man asks Jesus: “Who has believed our report, and to whom is the arm of the Lord revealed?” (*Is 53:1*).

Eucharistic man prays for all to leave the temporal allurements of sin, and seek God, while He may be found (*Is 55:6*). God’s words are true, found in the entire 73 books of His Holy Bible, and the traditions which have been handed down to us (*2Th 2:15*).

“And I fell down before his feet, to adore him. And he said to me: ‘See you do it not. I am your fellow servant and of your brethren who have the testimony of Jesus. Adore God. For the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy’ (19:10).

This person whom Saint John fell down to adore was not Jesus, although he thought that it was Him. How striking is the image and likeness of Eucharistic man to Jesus, so that the apostle who rested his head on the breast of Jesus mistook this man for his Master? (*Jn 13:25*). This person is Eucharistic man, Petrus Romanus the Great Monarch as we stated earlier.

It must be said, it must be known, it must be understood, that when God said: “Let us make man to Our image and likeness...and God created man to His Own image, to the image of God He created him, male and female He created them” (*Gn 1:26,27*), He did this in two stages. First in the image of God, and second, for those who receive Christ Jesus Eucharist, God makes them into His likeness too. This image and likeness is now fulfilled and complete!

‘See you do it not,’ for now Petrus Romanus reveals who he is: *‘I am your fellow servant and of your brethren who have the testimony of Jesus.’* Here is the full unity in the Mystical Body of Christ in Eucharistic man which includes the angels and saints in Heaven and on earth in the Church. All are one in the Lord: “One God and Father of all, Who is above all, and through all, and in us all” (*Ep 4:6*). The testimony

Chapter 19

which Petrus Romanus gave of Jesus is proof of Eucharistedness: *‘For the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.’*

“And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse, and he that sat upon him was called faithful, and true, and with justice does he judge and fight” (19:11).

A ‘white horse’ mystically signifies ‘Divine power,’ and this ‘white horse’ is identified as coming from the Eucharistic Church (*heaven*). This rider is the Great Monarch Petrus Romanus, Eucharistic man, in his capacity of temporal power, and here he is called ‘*faithful and true,*’ and the weapons of his warfare are *faith, truth, and justice, with these he judges and fights.*

In chapter 6 we saw that the rider on the ‘white horse’ was fallen man, the Antichrist, in union with the fallen angel Lucifer, had ‘a crown given him’ and he went forth arrogantly conquering (*Apoc 6:2*). That ‘white horse,’ Lucifer, alias Satan, and the Devil, was given Divine power, when he was an Archangel serving his Creator, the Lord God Almighty, Holy Trinity. This ‘Divine power’ was not taken away from him when he challenged God and revolted against Him. This then brings up the question of the Divine justice of The Divine Justice. Why did God not take away this Divine power from the fallen archangel? God did not take back His gift, but He gave to those who would believe in His Name, Divine Power, and with this Divine Power comes the Name of Christ Jesus, for Jesus said: “These signs shall follow them that believe: in My Name they shall cast out Devils” (*Mk 16:17*). God also said of His angel which He sent with Moses leading the Israelites out of Egypt: “Take notice of him (*angel*), and hear his voice, and do not think him one to be contemned, for he will not forgive when you have sinned, and My Name is in him” (*Ex 23:21*). The name of that angel is the Archangel Michael, as he is the ‘your prince,’ that is the guardian angel of Israel (*Dn 10:13,21*). ‘The Name of God’ which Lucifer originally received with the Divine power, he rejected the ‘Name of God’ when he revolted, and although he still has the power, he does not have the ‘Name of God’ in that power.

Chapter 19

Therefore, when Eucharistic man uses the Divine Power of God, he uses it in unity in God, he uses it in the Name of God, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, which Jesus won for us by His birth, life, passion, death, and resurrection. The ‘white horse’ here of 19:11 mystically signifies ‘Divine power,’ and the rider is called ‘*faithful and true.*’

“And his eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many diadems. And he had a name written, which no man knows but himself” (19:12).

‘His eyes were as a flame of fire,’ and we said before that this is so because he has received the Divine wisdom and knowledge of God. ‘Many diadems’ is the unity of ‘full of grace’ which was given to Mary (Lk 1:28). The many diadems are many of the titles of Jesus bestowed upon Eucharistic man.

‘he had a name written, which no man knows but himself’ and that name is Eucharistic man, which no man can know because that name it is revealed only in Eucharistic unity. The unbelieving can never know it, because they deny Holy Eucharist.

“And he was clothed with a garment sprinkled with Blood, and his name is called: the Word of God” (19:13).

He had on his wedding garment, which he can only receive through Holy Eucharist, and so the garment was sprinkled with blood, that is the Blood of Christ. His name is called ‘the Word of God’ because he believes in every word in the whole 73 books of the Bible, and it is stated there: “The Word was made flesh and dwelt among us” (Jn 1:14). For those who worthily receive and live the Seven Sacraments, ‘the Word **IS** made flesh.’ This ‘Word made flesh’ is Eucharistic man, who has received Jesus Holy Communion, has received power to be made the sons of God, because Eucharistic man believes in the Name of Jesus, and consequently is born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God (Jn 1:13.14). Only the true believers and practitioners of the Seven Sacraments which were given to us by Jesus, and recorded in Holy Scripture, can become the new creature, Eucharistic man.

Chapter 19

“And the armies that are in Heaven followed him on white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean” (19:14).

The armies that are in Heaven are the Mystical Body of Christ, that is: the Church Triumphant (*angels and saints in Heaven*), the Church Militant (*Eucharistic man in heaven on earth*), are riding those ‘white horses’ (*Divine Power*), clothed in the ‘fine linen’ (*victorious risen Christ Jesus*), and ‘these follow the Lamb whithersoever he goes’ (*Apoc 14:4*).

It must be added here that when fallen man was redeemed by the Precious Blood of Jesus Christ, and Eucharistic man accepted all that Jesus asked of him, and followed His precepts, then by the gift of God, it was given to this faithful man the sublime gift of Eucharistic unity in God, with the task to take back what the Devil stole from man in the first place, and return all to Jesus, Who in turn gives all to the Father (*1Co 15:23-28*). Jesus prayed to the Father: “I in them, and Thou (*Father*) in Me, that they may be made perfect in One” (*Jn 17:23*). This ‘One’ is Eucharistic oneness, Eucharistic man who is ‘made perfect’ in the unity of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.

“And out of his mouth proceeds a sharp two-edged sword, that with it he may strike the nations. And he shall rule them with a rod of iron, and he treads the winepress of the fierceness of the wrath of God the Almighty” (19:15).

The ‘*sharp two-edged sword*’ is defense and attack, to defend the Word of God and all who call upon His Name, and to attack the infidels with the Spirit of the Living God. It is written: “The saints shall rejoice in glory, they shall be joyful in their beds. The high praises of God shall be in their mouth, and two-edged swords in their hands, to execute vengeance upon the nations, chastisements among the people, to bind their kings with fetters, and their nobles with manacles of iron, to execute upon them the judgment that is written, this glory is to all His saints” (*Ps 149:5-9*). Not only does Eucharistic man, this *army of heaven*, destroy the enemy, it also rules them with a rod of iron, as stated above, and as we saw earlier: “He shall rule them with a *rod of iron*, and as the vessel of a potter they shall be broken, as I also have received of

Chapter 19

My Father, and I will give him the Morning Star” (*Apoc 2:27,28*). Receiving the Morning Star signifies that, as Adam was given authority over the earth (*Gn 1:28*), now, through Christ Jesus the New Man, Eucharistic man is born, that is in the new creation, (signified by the Morning Star announcing the New Day), is given the authority and power over all of creation.

“And he has on his garment and on his thigh written: King of kings and Lord of lords” (19:16).

In the unity of God in man, and man in God, the Divinity of God in the humanity of man, resides the fulness of Christ. Therefore, Eucharistic man has grown up in Christ Jesus, Son of God, Who is the Head of the Body *{the Church}* (*Ep 4:15*), and now walks in newness of life, in the likeness of the resurrection of Christ Jesus (*Rm 6:4,5*), and is now perfect man, in the age of the fulness of Christ which has come (*Ep 4:13*), all with Christ Jesus, King of kings, and Lord of lords, for the Garment is Christ.

“And I saw an angel standing in the sun, and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the birds that did fly through the midst of heaven: ‘Come, gather yourselves together to the great supper of God, that you may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of tribunes, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all freemen, and bondmen, and of little and of great” (19:17,18).

The ‘angel standing in the sun’ is Petrus Romanus Eucharistic man, standing in the new day, in Christ Jesus, in the Victory of the Father. He calls all the angels and saints together (who collectively now are one, that is Eucharistic man), to come and possess all the things that were prepared for them by the selfish evil man who built only for himself, for it is written: “The wealth (*substance*) of the sinner is kept for the just” (*Pr 13:22*). God gives good things to them that love Him. “He has filled the hungry with good things, and the rich He has sent empty away” (*Lk 1:53*).

“And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war with him that sat upon the horse, and

Chapter 19

with his army. And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet, who wrought signs before him, wherewith he seduced them who received the character of the beast, and who adored his image. These two were cast alive into the pool of fire burning with brimstone. And the rest were slain by the sword of him that sits upon the horse, which proceeds out of his mouth, and all the birds were filled with their flesh” (19:19-21).

The Antichrist (*beast*) and the False Prophet, referred to in chapters 11 and 13, have assembled their armies. They have put in place all their technology and persuasive power to confront the people of God, that is the Kingdom of God. They use their arrogance and superior pride, anger, lust, greed, sloth, envy and gluttonous skills to convince all people to fight against the idea of God Almighty. They are defeated. With them are all those who served their wicked Zionist system of ‘economic, political and religious’ snares, which were set to imprison and corrupt the poor of the earth. ‘*These two were cast alive into the pool of fire burning with brimstone*’ they were cast into Hell for all eternity.

‘The rest were slain by the sword of him that sits upon the horse, which proceeds out of his mouth.’ The devil and his minions have no more souls to possess, because those who remain upon the earth are united in the truth of Eucharistic union in God, while the once mighty have lost all positions, power and worldly wealth, and so they are slain by the word of God. They die in their seven deadly sins.

The second last battle is ended, just one more to come.

Chapter 20

The 1,000 years. The Last Judgement

This chapter will reveal nine (*the spiritual number for judgement*) major points which must be understood:-

1. The binding and chaining up of Satan. (20:2,3).
2. Thousand years in which the saints reign with Christ. (20:4,6).
3. The first resurrection. (20:5,6).
4. The second death. (20:6).
5. Gog and Magog. (20:7).
6. The camp of the saints, the Beloved City. (20:8).
7. Fire from God out of Heaven. (20:9).
8. The Last Judgement. (20:12-15).
9. The pool of fire. (20:9,14).

1. The binding and chaining of Satan.

“And I saw an Angel coming down from Heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in His hand” (20:1).

The Angel coming down from Heaven with the key to the bottomless pit is Jesus Christ.

“And He laid hold on the dragon, the old serpent, which is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years” (20:2).

By His birth, life, passion, death and resurrection, He defeated the power of Satan, He defeated ‘death,’ who is Satan. Jesus has destroyed death: “He has taken the same out of the way, fastening it to the Cross” (Col 2:14).

“And He cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should no more seduce the nations till the thousand years be finished” (20:3a).

He gave to those who would believe in the saving power of the Name of Jesus, power to bind Satan and cast him into the infernal pit of Hell. So today, when we say, and hear others say: “In the Name of Jesus, I bind you Satan and cast you out into the deep recesses of Hell...,” they are doing the same thing which true Christians have been doing for a long

Chapter 20

time (*spiritually 1,000 means an immense number, or a long period of time*), that is, for a thousand years.

“His fame went throughout all Syria, and they presented to Him...such as were possessed by devils, and lunatics, and those that had the palsy, and He cured them...they brought to Him many that were possessed with devils, and He cast out the spirits with His word” (*Mt 4:24;8:16*).

“For He said unto him: ‘Go out of the man, thou unclean spirit.’ And He asked him: ‘What is thy name?’ And he said to Him: ‘My name is ‘legion,’ for we are many’” (*Mk 5:8,9*).

“What word is this, for with authority and power He commands the unclean spirits, and they go out?...And Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit and cured the boy and restored him to his father” (*Lk 4:36; 9:43*).

There can be no doubt that Jesus bound Satan for all the time of the New Testament, and the priests and faithful have received His gift of binding and casting out devils for this long period of time.

“And after that, he must be loosed a little time” (20:3b).

We saw in 9:1,2 that in 1958 with the election of the second John XXIII the bottomless pit was opened and let all hell loose, and then later in chapter 11, the Red Dragon, (*Satan*), takes over rulership of the world after the Antichrist and the False Prophet are defeated. He rules for a short time, that is for 45 days (from day 1290 until day 1335). This is the ‘*short time*’ in which ‘*he must be loosed.*’

Jesus told us: “For there shall be then great tribulation, such as has not been from the beginning of the world until now, neither shall be. And unless those days had been shortened, no flesh should be saved, but for the sake of the elect those days shall be shortened” (*Mt 24: 21,22*).

Those people who are preaching that the thousand year reign of Christ is yet to come, simply do not know the truth, they are in error, and preaching heresy. These same people ‘bind Satan...and cast him out,’ this binding is what is written above: ‘*bound him (Satan) for a thousand years,*’ so now the thousand years are almost over. Do not be fooled by

Chapter 20

those false prophets of Protestantism who say the 1,000 years are yet to come.

2. Thousand years in which the saints reign with Christ.

“And I saw seats. And they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them. And the souls of them that were beheaded for the testimony of Jesus, and for the word of God, and who had not adored the beast, nor his image, nor received his character in their foreheads, or in their hands, and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years” (20:4).

In the last days, there shall be great tribulation and many will be martyred, and the saints in Heaven above await the arrival of those last martyrs: ‘And it was said to them that they should rest for a little time till their fellow servants, and their brethren, who are to be slain even as they, should be filled up.’ So here it is recorded that there were ‘*seats, and they sat upon them,*’ why? ‘*That they should rest for a little time.*’ *Judgement was given them,* and they had been judged and found worthy to *live and reign with Christ* in Heaven, assisting the Church Militant and Suffering with their prayers, and waiting for the final numbers of those who will stand firm in the last days, some to be martyred.

With their prayers they give courage for the faithful on earth to stand firm until the end, and so make way for Heaven to be joined to earth, for the final battle: ‘These are they who are come out of great tribulation and have washed their robes and have made them white in the Blood of the Lamb.’ From the time of the first martyr Stephen (*Ac 7:59*), until the end is a long period of time, identified as 1,000 years.

This then brings us to another part which must not be overlooked: The ‘*living and reigning*’ is the Eucharistic Church which never can be defeated, and so, those who as yet are still on earth, and live, and practice the Seven Sacraments of the Church, in spite of tribulations, are living and reigning as Eucharistic man in Christ in His Church on earth, as it is in Heaven. The Church can never die. “The root of the just shall not be moved...the house of the just shall stand firm” (*Pr 12:3,7*). Jesus also said: “He that eats My Flesh and drinks My Blood has Everlasting Life, and I will raise him up in the last day” (*Jn 6:55*).

Chapter 20

This ‘*raising up*’ is entry into Eucharistic oneness in Christ Jesus. Since the Church cannot be moved, and shall stand firm, then those who stand firm in the last day, are those who have come into the marvelous gift of Eucharistic Oneness in Christ, and who usher in the Kingdom of God onto earth as it is in Heaven. Jesus said: “I dispose to you, as My Father has disposed to Me, a Kingdom” (*Lk 22:29*).

3. The first resurrection.

“The rest of the dead lived not, till the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection” (20:5).

The ‘*rest of the dead*’ who ‘*lived*’ in their soul in Heaven, did not receive their glorified body until after the Great Tribulation. At death, our soul separates from the body and goes to Heaven, most often through Purgatory, (those who are called there), while our body decays and dies. Because of the victory of Christ over death by His birth, life, passion, death, and resurrection, we who believe in Him, ‘*rise in Him,*’ and receive our new body, which is now the ‘*new man,*’ the ‘*new creature,*’ that is Eucharistic man. “I know that my Redeemer lives, and in the last day I shall rise out of the earth” (*Jb 19:25*). When the end of the tribulation comes, and those souls who are in Heaven return to earth for the final battle, it is at that time they receive their glorified bodies, and join Eucharistic man to inflict the final defeat on Satan. “All these, being approved by the testimony of faith, received not the promise, God providing some better thing for us, that they should not be perfected without us” (*Hb 11:39,40*).

4. The second death.

“Blessed and holy is he that has part in the first resurrection. In these the second death has no power. But they shall be priests of God, and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years.” (20:6).

This is the fifth blessing of the Apocalypse for having used the graces of God.

The saints in Heaven above, joining Eucharistic man in heaven on earth (*Mt 6:10*), in the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, now walk in newness of life, in the likeness of His resurrection (*Rm 6:4,5*), which is

Chapter 20

the ‘*first resurrection.*’ The joining of body and soul after death is confirmed by Jesus: “Fear ye not them that kill the body, and are not able to kill the soul, but rather fear Him that can destroy both soul and body in Hell” (*Mt 10:28*). Jesus gives us our new glorified Eucharistic body, as was shown on Mount Tabor (*Mk 9:1*). This ‘*first resurrection*’ is the glorious entrance into the mystical union in Christ Jesus, and since they have been already judged and found worthy, the *second death* is being sent to Hell for all eternity, and for the victorious in Christ, the *second death* has no part. This is the ninth time the name of Christ is mentioned in the Apocalypse, and nine in spiritual numbers is judgement, here it is for those victorious in Him. ‘*priests of God,*’ for they have offered the sacrifice of themselves on the altar of their own heart for God and His Christ.

5. Gog and Magog.

“And when the thousand years shall be finished, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, and shall go forth and seduce the nations which are over the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, and shall gather them together to battle, the number of whom is as the sand of the sea” (20:7).

‘when the thousand years shall be finished, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison.’ If we look at what we recorded earlier in 16:12 where ‘*a river went out of the place of pleasure to water Paradise, which from thence is divided into four heads...the fourth river is Euphrates,*’ and look at the epicenter of the False Prophet Mohammed’s empire, you will see it is Gog and Magog.

In the history of the Israelites, we have seen the great prophet Samuel. The firstborn son of Samuel was Joel, who walked not in the way of the Lord, but turned aside after lucre, and took bribes, and perverted judgment (*1K 8:2,3*). The son of the holy man gave his service to Satan, and so it is today. The son of Joel was Gog (*1Chr 5:4*), and this name means ‘hidden or covered.’ The family of *Gog* dispersed into the region of *Magog* and that is the area around modern day Turkey, Syria, Iraq, Iran, and also further afield to the northern regions of Russia and China,

Chapter 20

which happen to be the regions of the ‘Unholy Alliance’ which we talked about in chapter 17. Notice the names and the areas of *Magog*! The name *Magog* means cruel or barbarian. Based on the history of *Gog*, we can now see that the use of the name of *Gog* in the Apocalypse stands for all the visible as well as the hidden persecutors of the Church of God in general, and in particular the Jewish (Zionist) Antichrist, and False Prophet/False Messiah.

The numbers of the army of *Gog and Magog* gathered together to battle is staggering: ‘*the number of whom is as the sand of the sea*’ referring to the 200 million in 9:16.

6. The camp of the saints, the Beloved City.

“And they came upon the breadth of the earth, and encompassed the camp of the saints, and the Beloved City” (20:8).

The camp of the saints is all the homes, or ‘chapels’ where Eucharistic man and the converts live. The Beloved City is the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, because Jesus, the Head of the Church, is the Beloved Son of His Beloved Father (*Ps 67:13*), and “Jesus Christ, yesterday, and today, and the same for ever” (*Hb 13:8*).

7. Fire from God out of Heaven.

“And there came down fire from God out of Heaven and devoured them” (20:9a).

This ‘*fire*’ is the power of God, the fire of the Holy Ghost, which, by the prayers and invocation of the faithful, destroys all the enemies of the Church: “Fire consumed their young men, and their maidens were not lamented” (*Ps 77:63*). However, here there is real fire which burns and consumes the wicked. *Fire* is the element which man fears most, and this death is horrendous to the evil ones.

“And the Devil, who seduced them, was cast into the pool of fire and brimstone, where both the beast and the false prophet, shall be tormented day and night, for ever and ever” (20:9b,10).

This is the first death for the Devil. His second death comes at the Last Judgement. ‘*the pool of fire and brimstone...tormented day and night, for*

Chapter 20

ever and ever,’ suggests that the torture is never ending. *‘Day and night’* is a term used to mean never ending, as there is no *‘night’* in the Heavenly eternity, here it emphasizes that for the wicked, the *‘day’* is an eternal darkness, the eternal night.

“And I saw a great white Throne, and One sitting upon it, from Whose face the earth and heaven fled away, and there was no place found for them” (20:11).

The grandeur (*great*) and purity (*white*) of all associated with Christ is recorded as He comes to Judge the world.

The earth and heaven fled away signifies the total cleansing of the earth and the cosmos from chemical and environmental contamination as recorded: “For this they are wilfully ignorant of: that the heavens were before, and the earth out of water and through water, consisting by the word of God: whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished. But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of the ungodly men. But the day of the Lord shall come as a thief, in which the heavens shall pass away with great violence and the elements shall be melted with heat and the earth and the works which are in it shall be burnt up. Seeing then that all these things are to be dissolved, what manner of people ought you to be in holy conversation and godliness? Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of the Lord, by which the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with the burning heat? But we look for new heavens and a new earth according to His promises, in which justice dwells” (2P 3:5-7,10-13).

The *‘earth and heaven fled away,’* also means that those who set themselves up by force and deceit to control the world (*earth*) and the church (*heaven*) is confirmation that the Devil and his cohorts are overcome by the power of God and cast into Hell.

8. The Last Judgement.

“And I saw the dead, great and small, standing in the presence of the

Chapter 20

Throne. And the books were opened, and another book was opened, which was the Book of Life. And the dead were judged by those things which were written in the books, according to their works” (20:12).

It is necessary to have this Last Judgement, because, in the beginning, Adam gave his authority over the whole earth and all it contained, including his progeny to Satan. In total righteousness, God allows Satan to be present, because God has the final power to judge all of His creatures (angels and men) in the history of creation, and so Satan has a legal right to be present: “...the devil stand at his right hand” (*Ps 108:6*). However, it is the Just Judge Who judges the living and the dead (*1P 4:5*), but how that fallen angel will suffer from the just judgement of God.

‘The books were opened,’ and the entire creation from beginning to end will hear the account of all the actions, thoughts, and words of each other. All is recorded. All our deeds are made public to all of creation. “For there is nothing covered that shall not be revealed, nor hidden that shall not be known” (*Lk 12:2*). In human terms, this will be billions of billions of people and angels, sitting in judgement which will last for years in earthly terms, but remember that in eternity there is no time.

‘The dead, great and small’ are the sinners (*dead*), those who considered themselves something (*great*) and now must face the dreadful moment of their mortality, along with those who thought their actions would be unnoticed (*small*). There were no seats for they are *standing* before the Just Judge to receive their sentence. This is a terrifying moment for each one, as individual verdicts are handed out. There are no defense lawyers or counsel, only the individual conscience and Satan’s accusing them for their co-operation with him in his evil plans.

‘Standing in the presence of the Throne.’ In the Last Judgement, which some call the General Judgement, is the final showing of all the works of man and angels, which were done from the beginning of creation (*1Co 6:3*), for of the angels is written: “And the angels who kept not their principality but forsook their own habitation, He (*God*) has reserved under darkness in everlasting chains, unto the judgment of the great day”

Chapter 20

(*Jude 1:6*).

Then Jesus also judges and condemns Satan, who with all his cohorts will hear: “Depart from me, you cursed, into everlasting fire, which was prepared for the devil and his angels” (*Mt 25:41*). What a terrible condemnation!

In the *Book of Life*, are the names of all the saints and angels, and to these who are seated on the right hand of God, the Lord will say: “Come, ye blessed of My Father, possess you the Kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world” (*Mt 25:34*). What a magnificent invitation!

9. The pool of fire.

“And the sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and Hell gave up their dead that were in them. And they were judged, every one according to their works” (20:13).

In ancient traditions it was thought that to be lost at *sea* would be to be lost forever and not gain eternal happiness. Here is the comfort for those who harbored such fears, and so *‘the sea gave up the dead.’* When it says that *‘death and Hell’* gave up their dead, it means that all the sinners (*death*) in Hell will step forward and be judged, *‘every one according to their works’* as we saw in the previous verse.

The reason for stating or repeating these events in the two separate verses is to confirm the certainty of the event (*Gn 41:32*).

“And Hell and death were cast into the pool of fire. This is the second death” (20:14).

The judgement is passed, the condemnation is given, the term is for ever and ever without end.

“And whosoever was not found written in the Book of Life, was cast into the pool of fire” (20:15).

There are many people today who are lulled into believing that Hell does not exist. Hell does exist, in the very depths of the earth, in total

Chapter 20

claustrophobic darkness, with a sulphur fire burning, and this goes on for ever and ever, without ceasing. Concerning those who go there Jesus confirmed: "...their worm dies not, and the fire is not extinguished" (*Mk 9:43*). What a horrible, yet just thing it will be to all those who hear when Jesus will say to those on His left hand: 'Depart from Me, you cursed, into everlasting fire, which was prepared for the Devil and his angels.'

How can the unbelievers not believe?

How much harder must we pray for the conversion of sinners!

Chapter 21

The New Jerusalem described

“I saw a new heaven and a new earth. For the first heaven and the first earth was gone, and the sea is now no more” (21:1).

The ‘*new heaven*’ is the cosmos without the evil spirits floating around. They are all locked up in Hell, along with all their human partners, never more to be remembered. The *new heaven* is free of all satellites, drones, debris, and all pollutants which were sent there by the careless and greedy man, and the ‘*new earth*’ is that which has been made free of all chemical pollution damage done by selfish man. Both the heavens (*the elements*) and the earth have been burnt with fire (2P 3:10), to make them pure for the New man, the new creature, Eucharistic man, to live in immaculacy in the sight of Almighty God in the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church (*Sion*).

‘*The first heaven and the first earth*’ is also in the spiritual sense the Old and the New Testaments. The First Testament, (*also called the Old Testament*), is the promise of the Father to send us His Son Jesus Christ, the Messiah, and also to send us the Holy Ghost. The Second Testament, (*also called the New Testament*), is the fulfilment of the promise to send us the Son, our Messiah, and the promise to send us the Holy Ghost. The Third Testament is the fulfilment of the promise to send us the Holy Ghost, and bringing all true believers into unity in God, through the sacrifice and the Sacrament of Holy Eucharist, Christ Jesus. This Third Testament is also the Second Pentecost and the fulfilment of the Second Advent, the completion of Eucharistic unity of God in man and man in God.

‘*The sea is now no more*’ for we no longer need faith (*sea*) in Heaven, as we saw in 15:2. We have entered into the Beatific Vision, to be with our God for all eternity.

“And I, John, saw the Holy City, the New Jerusalem, coming down out of Heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband” (21:2).

Chapter 21

The *Holy City* is the Church, and the New Jerusalem is exactly what the word means, 'justice' and 'peace.' As was said in the 'Prologue,' Saint John was in the year 2023 (or later) and 'saw' these things. John the prophet saw the beauty to be revealed in us, Eucharistic man. The 'bride' is we, the 'Mystical Body of Christ, the Church,' adorned in our new glorified bodies, Eucharistic bodies, for our 'Husband,' Christ, Who is in Himself Holy Trinity, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. This now is the single unity of the Church Triumphant, for there is no more need for 'militant,' and no more 'suffering.' This Holy City cannot be invaded by the Devil, because he is gone forever. This *New Jerusalem* is more spectacular than the Garden of Eden which was given to Adam, because now the test is passed, and the New Man, Eucharistic man, has fought most diligently for the graces and favor of God, having eschewed the snares and enticements of the serpent. Purity, immaculacy, and charity, have replaced the deceits fostered by the wicked one, who is now rejected, never more to be remembered (*Is 43:25; Mi 7:19*). The Lord our God remains forever!

Mystically Jerusalem also means the soul, and what we have here is the immaculate, eternal, Eucharistic soul of the New man.

"And I heard a great voice from the Throne, saying: 'Behold the Tabernacle of God with men, and He will dwell with them. And they shall be His people, and God Himself with them shall be their God'" (21:3).

The 'great voice' is Petrus Romanus. 'Behold the Tabernacle of God with men,' is the Eucharistic unity of God in man, the Living Tabernacle, so Divinely He 'dwells with them.'

'They shall be His people' signifies the New Israel, for the word Israel is not the political entity created in 1948, no Israel means 'the people of God,' which the Israelis of today are not. The Israelis of present day political Israel have no part in the true Israel, but those true Israelites who seek the coming of the Messiah and convert to Christ Jesus will be partakers in the True New Israel, the New Jerusalem (*Rm 11:25*). 'They shall be His people' answers the prayer which Jesus made to the Father on the night before He suffered: "Glorify Thy Son, that Thy Son may

Chapter 21

glorify Thee. As Thou have given Him power over all flesh, that He may give Eternal Life to all whom Thou have given Him. Now this is Eternal Life: that they may know Thee, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, Whom Thou have sent” (*Jn 17:1-3*). God is now united in His people, in His children, in Eucharistic man, because God is Eucharist.

“And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes, and death shall be no more, nor mourning, nor crying, nor sorrow shall be any more, for the former things are passed away” (21:4).

This is the new man, the new creature, who will have no sorrowful memories, no evil one provoking to pride and anger, no ‘enemies’ to be remembered, no ‘loved ones’ who did not make it to Heaven to be remembered, for all sin is done away with, and will be remembered no more, as it is written: “For behold I create new heavens, and a new earth, and the former things shall not be in remembrance, and they shall not come upon the heart” (*Is 65:17*). In this newness ‘*the former things are passed away,*’ there will be no more need of prophecy as we will have the ‘mind of Christ.’

“And He that sat on the Throne, said: ‘Behold, I make all things new. And He said to me: ‘Write. For these words are most faithful and true’” (21:5).

In verse 1:8 we said that the ‘*Amen*’ ended the words of Jesus at that time. Now we change back to Christ Jesus speaking. God has always sat on His Throne, and no one could take it away from Him, even though the wicked tried. This doing a new thing has been promised of old: “...and new things do I declare, before they spring forth, I will make you hear them” (*Is 42:9*). These new things are now here. All is safe and secure, God is faithful and true to His promise, and so evil is no more. “The Lord is faithful in all His words and holy in all His works” (*Ps 144:13*). He commands Saint John to ‘*write*’ and no matter how extraordinary the revelation he had received, he must record all, ‘*for these words are most faithful and true.*’

“And He said to me: ‘It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End. To him that thirsts, I will give of the fountain of the water

Chapter 21

of life, freely” (21:6).

Saint John does not tell a lie, he confirms: *‘He said to me,’* and says that Jesus has completed all things, *‘It is done.’* He confirms the identity of the Speaker: *‘I am Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End.’* A little later Jesus expands this title to include “...the First and the Last, the Beginning and the End” (*Apoc 22:13*), and so here He is building us up step by step to understand Who He is. Remember He said earlier: “I am the First and the Last...” (*Apoc 1:17;2:8*), and this saying means that ‘He is Eternal,’ and Who is the First of all creatures, the First cause of all beings, and the Last end or perfect desires of all beings. He is the *Alpha*, which is first letter of the Greek alphabet (*Saint John wrote this prophesy in Greek*) and He is the *Omega*, which is the last letter in the Greek alphabet. There is nothing more to be desired than being in Him.

When He says: *‘I will give of the fountain of the Water of Life, freely,’* He is fulfilling the promise and the encouragement which He gave on earth: “I am the Bread of Life. He that comes to Me shall not hunger, and he that believes in Me shall never thirst...and on the last, and great day of the festivity, Jesus stood and cried, saying: ‘If any man thirst, let him come to Me and drink’” (*Jn 6:35; 7:37*). The earthly festival is completed in the New Jerusalem, and the eternal festivity begins, God gives us His very Self, living in us, and we in Him - forever!

“He that shall overcome shall possess these things. And I will be his God, and he shall be My son” (21:7).

The magnificent promise is given: *‘He that shall overcome shall possess these things.’* By overcoming our human frailties and evil desires, we shall possess Eucharistic union in Him. The fact is now definite, we are the sons of God, “sons of the most High” (*Ps 81:6*), we are the new creature: *“There is neither Jew nor Greek: there is neither bond nor free: there is neither male nor female. For you are all one in Christ Jesus” (Ga 3:28)*, completing what He said in Genesis 1:26 “Let Us make man to our image and likeness.” It is done!

“But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, they shall

Chapter 21

have their portion in the pool burning with fire and brimstone, which is the second death” (21:8).

The warning is given to all who do not deny the devil. No doubts are allowed. No fears. No sin. No ‘political correctness.’ The end of all these evils of Satan, is everlasting damnation in the hell of fire.

“And there came one of the seven angels, who had the vials full of the seven last plagues, and spoke with me, saying: ‘Come and I will show you the bride, the wife of the Lamb’” (21:9).

Eucharistic man now speaks and Saint John is given proof that all which the faithful have suffered and worked for is rewarded. It is fitting that one of the *angels who poured out a vial of one of the last plagues* should show the victory of the faithful, the Church Militant, aided by the agony of the Church Suffering, and encouraged by the prayers of the Church Triumphant. The *angel* is rewarded for his obedience in carrying out his tough mission sending out one of the last deadly plagues upon earth. Saint John is brought to see the beauty of the Eternal Church, *‘the bride, the wife of the Lamb.’*

“And he took me up in spirit to a great and high mountain, and he showed me the Holy City Jerusalem, coming down out of Heaven from God” (21:10).

‘And he took me up in spirit’ because the humanity alone could not comprehend the extraordinary beauty which he was about to see in Eucharistic man. He was brought to *‘a great and high mountain’* above all the earthly understanding or comprehension of ordinary man. God said: “Be holy because I am holy” (*Lv 11:44*), and only in this condition of perfection could he see *‘the Holy City Jerusalem, coming down out of Heaven from God.’*

Now is shown the beauty of the *‘bride.’* Consider in your heart for a moment your idea of a perfectly beautiful bride, all magnificent in white gown and veil, flowers and garlands - and then magnify that beauty way beyond your natural ability, and now see the Perfect Bride! See the beautiful Lamb, radiant white, immaculate, full of love and affection, awaiting His reward - those who believed in Him. Now comes the

Chapter 21

description which elaborates the highest attainment in reaching God (*great and high mountain*). Isaiah said: “And in the last days the mountain of the house of the Lord shall be prepared on the top of mountains, and it shall be exalted above the hills, and all nations shall flow unto it” (*Is 2:2*). This ‘*great and high mountain*’ which is built on top of mountains, is built on top of every expectation possible, and beyond even that. It is built in oneness in God, in perfect unity (*Holy City*), in the tranquility (*Jerusalem - justice and peace*), achieving the goal of our lives (*into Heaven, the reward from God*). This is the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church.

“having the glory of God, and the light thereof was like to a precious stone, as to the jasper stone even as crystal” (21:11).

The City is built in the beauty (*glory of God*), radiating in wisdom and knowledge (*light...like a precious stone*), and having our illuminating glorified body of light, warm and translucent, seeing and knowing all things (*jasper stone even as crystal*). This is the glory of the holy and immaculate saints of God.

“And it had a wall great and high, having twelve gates, and in the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel” (21:12).

Here is the complete universality of the fulfilment of God’s plan (*a wall great and high*). The access (*gates*), and the order, and the government of the universe (*twelve gates and twelve angels*), identified with and in God (*names written thereon*), in the fulness of all the people of God (*twelve tribes*). These twelve tribes are not just the exclusive original twelve tribes of the sons of Jacob who is called Israel, but all the tribes of the earth (*universal*) who are the fulness of the spiritual Israel, for all believers of Jesus Christ are spiritual Israelites.

“On the east, three gates, and on the north, three gates, and on the south, three gates, and on the west, three gates” (21:13).

This new creation is all encompassed in the Holy Trinity (*three gates each on east, north, south, and west*). The four walls each with three gates signify $4 \text{ times } 3 = 12$, which is spiritual completeness in the Holy

Chapter 21

Trinity. This is the Universal New Israel, with no geographical or political boundaries, this is the people of God occupying all of God's creation in unity in The Lord God Almighty. This new man, Eucharistic man, has achieved the purpose for which God created him. The 'gates' represent our access to God the Almighty in an orderly and open way.

“And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them, the twelve names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb” (21:14).

The foundation stones of the new city is the Third Testament, which is founded on the twelve tribes of Israel of the First Testament, and the twelve apostles of the Second Testament. The lamb that was offered in holocaust by faithful Abraham, and completed by Jesus, the Lamb of God in His own Body and Blood, believed and lived by those with absolute faith in the Seven Sacraments, is now revealed in Eucharistic man, Christ Jesus.

“And he that spoke with me had a measure of a reed of gold, to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall” (21:15).

Notice here that the 'rod' of correction which we saw in 11:1 is absent. Why? Because all is now perfect and corrections will never more be needed. The 'measure of a reed of gold' is a measure of the goodness of God (*gold*), well nourished, seeing the promises of God fulfilled: “Give, and it shall be given to you, good measure and pressed down and shaken together and running over shall they give into your bosom. For with the same measure that you shall mete withal, it shall be measured to you again” (*Lk 6:38*). 'The city, the gates, the wall' signify security in God's goodness, in His New Creation.

“And the city lies in a four-square, and the length thereof is as great as the breadth. And he measured the city with the golden reed for twelve thousand furlongs, and the length, and the height, and the breadth, thereof are equal” (21:16).

All is made and done to complete perfection (*four square*), nothing missing, nothing hidden, all is perfection. Now this measure of God has produced a city of 12,000 furlongs, that is a city in the infinite Divine Order and Maturity of God (*which is the spiritual 12 times 1,000*). There

Chapter 21

is no inequality in God's perfection, therefore *'the length, and the height, and the breadth, thereof are equal.'* We are then living in the perfection and the harmony and the fulfilment of all that God has promised us in His Word.

"And he measured the wall thereof an hundred forty-four cubits, the measure of a man, which is of an angel" (21:17).

Angel and man are now come into the oneness in God, *'the measure of a man, which is of an angel,'* Perfect man, Eucharistic man, there are no longer different beings, all are in unity in the oneness of God. We said in 1:15 (*quoting St. Paul*) that we should *'in all things grow up in Him, Who is the Head, walking in newness of Life, in the likeness of His resurrection, to perfect man, unto the measure of the age of the fulness of Christ.'* This newness includes the unity of all His creatures in Himself, in the glory and likeness of Himself, as in Genesis 1:26.

"And the building of the wall thereof was of jasper stone, but the City itself pure gold, like to clear glass" (21:18).

A *jasper stone* is a jewel, and so this jewel of a City which is built in the goodness of God is given to Eucharistic man, who sought first the Kingdom of God and His justice, and all these things have been added unto him (*Lk 12:31*). Eucharistic man is the goodness of God, and the purity of God, in Christ Jesus.

"And the foundations of the wall of the city were adorned with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper, the second, sapphire, the third a chalcedony, the fourth, an emerald, the fifth, sardonyx, the sixth, sardius, the seventh, chrysolite, the eighth, beryl, the ninth, a topaz, the tenth, a chrysoprasus, the eleventh, a jacinth, the twelfth, an amethyst" (21:19,20).

'The foundations of the wall of the city were adorned with all manner of precious stones' which are the archangels, angels and saints. "Be you also as living stones built up, a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ" (*1P 2:5*). Consider the magnificent array of the colors of these stones: black, blue, clear, green, pearl, purple, red, violet, white and yellow. Consider now

Chapter 21

that the stones represent all people, nations, and tongues, (for all of the above mentioned stones are ‘precious stones,’ and none are ‘semi-precious,’ for in Heaven, all is precious, all is perfect). The foundations of the wall are the fulfilment of what was said: “And the Lord their God will save them in that day, as the flock of His people, for Holy Stones shall be lifted up over His land” (*Zc 9:16*).

These twelve stones represent the twelve stones in the Rational (*breastplate*) of the High Priest (*Ex 25:7*) and the twelve apostles. But they also represent those people who believed, who hoped, who loved, who repented, who lived and died in justice, who suffered, who left error for Truth, who were hard-hearted and became meek in His Name, the innocent, the repentant, those who divested themselves of everything in order to be free to follow Jesus Christ, the virgins whose spirits shone with the Light of the Heaven of God.

“And the twelve gates are twelve pearls, one to each, and every several gate was of one several pearl. And the street of the city was pure gold, as it were, transparent glass” (21:21).

The pearl is a highly prized gem, whose description would indicate that it is a hard, shiny spherical mass, typically white or bluish-gray, formed within the shell of an oyster. This cannot be found on earth, and so that entrance through these gates is by giving up all worldly life in order to attain the ‘pearl of great price’ (*Mt 13:46*), which is the only way to gain entrance into the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church, the Holy City, the Kingdom of God.

“And I saw no Temple therein, for the Lord God Almighty is the Temple thereof, and the Lamb” (21:22).

We are the *Temple* of God. God dwelling in us is Eternal Light, and we are then the ‘light of the world,’ that is the new world which has come. By preparing ourselves through the Seven Sacraments, we prepare ourselves to receive the anointing above all anointings as stated earlier.

By believing in His word, and living in His promise which we accepted with great reverence, we prepared ourselves because we did know:

Chapter 21

“...that you are the Temple of God...for the Temple of God is holy, which you are...For you are the Temple of the Living God, as God said: ‘I will dwell in them and walk among them. And I will be their God, and they shall be My people’ (1Co 3:16,17; 2Co 6:16). Therefore when Saint John said that he saw ‘*no Temple therein, for the Lord God Almighty is the Temple thereof, and the Lamb,*’ he was seeing perfect man, Eucharist man, Christ Jesus, the Living Temple, the Living Tabernacle.

“And the City has no need of the sun, nor of the moon, to shine in it, for the glory of God has enlightened it, and the Lamb is the lamp thereof” (21:23).

Eucharistic man is living in Christ Jesus, the Light of the world: “I am the Light of the world. He that follows Me walks not in darkness, but shall have the Light of Life” (Jn 8:12). Therefore we live in His Light, and are His Light. We are one in God.

“And the nations shall walk in the light of it, and the kings of the earth shall bring their glory, and honour, into it. And the gates thereof shall not be shut by day, for there shall be no night there. And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it” (21:24-26).

Eucharistic man, the elect of God, living in His Glory, living in Heaven united with earth, are kings and priests in His Kingdom. Man is transfigured, he is become ‘shining and exceeding white as snow’ (Mk 9:2). In this glorious state, God is exalted, He has given Eucharistic man His very Self, and He has elevated His creature to His Own image and likeness too. The people of all nations are Eucharisted, and ‘*they bring the glory and honour of the nations into*’ the City of God (Tb 13:11; Ps 45:5; 86:3).

“There shall not enter into it any thing defiled, or that works abomination, or makes a lie, but they that are written in the Book of Life of the Lamb” (21:27).

There is no more evil, as all the defiled and that works abomination, and ‘*makes a lie,*’ are locked up in damnation for all eternity.

Chapter 21

Those who *are written in the Book of Life of the Lamb* shall live forevermore in eternal bliss.

Chapter 22

The Tree of Life. The Conclusion

“And he showed me a River of Water of Life, clear as crystal, proceeding from the Throne of God, and of the Lamb” (22:1).

Petrus Romanus shows St. John the glory of the New Garden of Eden. This is the arrival at the ‘Holy Age,’ the time when all the saints are living without sin, and without the fear of any sin, because sin is cast into Hell for ever. Of this time it is written: “Go to the side of the Holy Age, with them that live and give praise to God” (*Si 17:25*).

The ‘*River of Life*’ is the unity which God gives us after our sojourn on earth, flowing from His *Throne* of unending glory. The river which flowed out of the ‘Place of Pleasure’ to water Paradise divided into four heads (*Gn 2:10*), and now this river is united in the ‘*River of the Water of Life*.’ The Water of Life is the anointing of the Holy Ghost, enlightening us in the Divinity of Christ Jesus, and uniting us in the Majesty of God the Father. Eucharistic man has accomplished that which God had asked of the first man, Adam, which was to dress and to keep the Paradise of Pleasure (*Gn 2:15*). Now the Throne of God has no evils attacking it, because now it is ‘*clear as crystal*,’ His people are immaculate in Christ, the Beauty of God Almighty, living in His Beatific vision.

“In the midst of the street thereof, and on both sides of the river, was the Tree of Life, bearing twelve fruits, yielding its fruits every month, the leaves of the tree for the healing of the nations” (22:2).

Here we have ‘*the street*’ not ‘streets’ as we saw in Chapter 11 when the two witnesses were killed, nor in Chapter 14:2,3 when the adulterers of the word of God pleaded with Him that He had taught in their streets. No, here all is clear and straight forward. The prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled: “And a path and a way shall be there, and it shall be called the holy way, the unclean shall not pass over it, and this shall be unto you a straight way...No lion shall be there, nor shall any mischievous beast ...but they shall walk there that shall be delivered” (*Is 35:8,9*).

Chapter 22

The road is clear to the New Heaven and the New Earth, the unity of Heaven and Earth in the Kingdom of God, because *'on both sides of the river'* is the Lord God Himself. "God made a firmament, and divided the waters that were under the firmament, from those that were above the firmament...God called the firmament, Heaven" (*Gn 1:7,8*). God is all and in all, He is the Tree of Life. The bearing of twelve fruits signify the reward for our living the "charity¹, joy², peace³, patience⁴, benignity⁵, goodness⁶, longanimity⁷, mildness⁸, faith⁹, modesty¹⁰, continency¹¹ and chastity¹²" (*Ga 5:22*), while in our earthly habitat, and now receiving the perpetual happiness (*every month*) given to all those who made the tree good (*Mt 12:33*). *'The leaves of the trees'* are the shade and comfort given during the healing, restructuring, and the replenishing of the earth, which will increase and multiply (*Gn 1:28*). This is the Eucharistic Kingdom of Christ, King of All Nations.

"And there shall be no curse any more, but the Throne of God, and of the Lamb shall be in it. And His servants shall serve Him. And they shall see His face, and His Name shall be in their foreheads" (*22:3,4*). There is a forewarning to all who read the prophecy of this book - if you curse you will not get to Heaven. God cannot live with sin, for "in Him there is no sin" (*1Jn 3:5*). The curse, which is Satan, is gone to Hell.

Eucharistic man is set down in the Throne of God as we saw in Chapter 4. We said that sitting in the Throne are those who have overcome, and who have become Eucharistic. Eucharistic man sits in the Throne with Jesus, Lamb of God. We serve God, we serve each other, for God is in us all. We shall see His face, we shall see Him as He is, and we will be in the image and likeness of Him, as it is written: "We know that when He shall appear we shall be like to Him, because we shall see Him as He is" (*1Jn 3:2*). This is the Beatific Vision fulfilled. His Name is IN our foreheads, not ON as a decoration or tattoo, but in the knowledge and grace of God.

"And night shall be no more. And they shall not need the light of the lamp, nor the light of the sun, because the Lord God shall enlighten them. And they shall reign for ever and ever" (*22:5*).

Chapter 22

This is the never ending season of happiness and bliss. No more sin (*night*). We are the Light of Christ. “He that follows Me walks not in darkness, but shall have the Light of Life (*Jesus*)” (*Jn 8:12*).

“And he said to me: ‘These words are most faithful and true. And the Lord God of the spirits of the prophets sent His angel to show His servant the things which must be done shortly’ (22:6).

God ‘*sent His angel*’ Petrus Romanus, Eucharistic man, to show Saint John *the things which must be done shortly*. God does not lie, and Saint John was told by Jesus that he would not see death: “...till he (*they*) see the Kingdom of God coming in power” (*Mk 8:39*). Now Saint John has seen it. The arrival of the Kingdom must be accomplished in a short period of time, once it begins (*must be done shortly*) in three and a half years.

“And: ‘Behold I come quickly. Blessed is he that keeps the words of the prophecy of this book’” (22:7).

Here is the sixth blessing of the Apocalypse given to man for his perseverance.

When we see the beginning of the Great Tribulation happen, we must be ready, but it is not advisable to wait until then! We must keep our lamps burning brightly at all times, for we know not the day nor the hour. *‘The prophesy of this book’* is man transformed and transfigured (now changed - ‘transubstantiation’) through Christ Jesus, Holy Eucharist, in the Eucharistic Reign of Christ Jesus.

“And I, John, who have heard and seen these things, and, after I had heard and seen, I fell down to adore before the feet of the angel who showed me the things, and he said to me: ‘See you do it not. For I am your fellow servant, and of your brethren the prophets, and of them that keep the words of the prophecy of this book. Adore God’” (22:8,9).
‘I fell down to adore before the feet of the angel who showed me the things,’ for Saint John saw Eucharist man transformed into the image and likeness of God. Not sure who he was seeing he *‘fell down to adore’* but Petrus Romanus, the Great Monarch, Eucharistic man, again assures

Chapter 22

him that *'I am your fellow servant, and of your brethren the prophets, and of them that keep the words of the prophecy of this book. Adore God.'* There are no more two species, all are one in Christ Jesus, True Eucharist.

"And he said to me: 'Seal not the words of the prophecy of this book, for the time is at hand. He that hurts, let him hurt still, and he that is filthy, let him be filthy still, and he that is just, let him be justified still, and he that is holy, let him be sanctified still'" (22:10,11).

By his authority Petrus Romanus gives the command: *'Seal not the words of the prophecy of this book, for the time is at hand.'* The voice of the seven thunders in Chapter 10 were told to be sealed up (*Apoc 10:4*), but here the Monarch, Petrus Romanus wants all of us to read the words of this prophecy, receive blessings, take the words to heart, change our ways, become free from sin, so that we can become holy, sanctified and consecrated in Christ Jesus.

"Behold, I come quickly, and My reward is with Me, to render to every man according to his works. I am Alpha and Omega, the First and the Last, the Beginning and the End" (22:12,13).

Christ Jesus speaks: *'Behold, I come quickly.'* When all the events begins in the Great Tribulation, Christ comes quickly, so be aware!

The time of the Coming of Christ is something a lot of people seem to get confused about. The second coming of Christ is in us (*Hb 9:28*), as we said before. The third coming is to judge the world: *"Behold the Lord God shall come with strength, and His arm shall rule, behold His reward is with Him and His work is before Him" (Is 40:10).* We know that He is All, First, Beginning, Last, End. There is nothing else, and when I say that, I mean that beside God there is nothing else that we desire. Eucharistic man is *'His work (which) is before Him'* to prepare His arrival to judge the world.

"Blessed are they that wash their robes in the Blood of the Lamb, that they may have a right to the Tree of Life, and may enter in by the gates into the City" (22:14).

Chapter 22

Here is the seventh blessing of the Apocalypse giving spiritual perfection to man. This is the great blessing on Eucharistic man, for he is transformed by the Blood of the Lamb, he has entry to the Tree of Life, and he has entered *‘by the gates into the City,’* and these *‘gates’* are the Seven Sacraments. Enter into the Kingdom of God. Welcome Home!

“Without are dogs, and sorcerers, and unchaste, and murderers, and servers of idols, and every one that loves and makes a lie” (22:15).

We previously described who they are, and now all these are in Hell. They are without everything, except eternal torment.

“I, Jesus, have sent My angel, to testify to you these things in the churches. I am the root and stock of David, the Bright and Morning Star” (22:16).

Jesus has sent His angel, His Monarch, Petrus Romanus to Saint John, *‘to testify to you these things in the churches.’* *The Morning Star* which Jesus promised us in 2:28 is now present, and has arisen in our hearts, has grown to fulness in Him, so that we rule with Jesus Eucharist Who is our inheritance. We have arrived in the New Creation, of which the Morning Star is the herald of the New Day.

“And the spirit and the bride say: ‘Come.’ And he that hears, let him say: ‘Come.’ And he that thirsts, let him come. And he that will, let him take the Water of Life, freely” (22:17).

Eucharistic man, Christ Jesus, cries out to all the inhabitants of the earth: *“Come, forsake childishness and live” (Pr 9:6).* We are encouraged and instructed: *“All you that thirst, come to the waters: and you that have no money make haste, buy, and eat: come ye, buy wine and milk without money, and without any price. Why do you spend money for that which is not bread, and your labour for that which does not satisfy you? Hearken diligently to Me, and eat that which is good, and your soul shall be delighted in fatness. Incline your ear and come to Me: hear and your soul shall live, and I will make an everlasting covenant with you, the faithful mercies of David” (Is 55:1-3).* Come, come to the beauty which God has prepared for you. Come, join us! Again this invitation is repeated: Come, come to the beauty which God has prepared for you.

Chapter 22

Come, join us in the New Creation, the Bright and Morning Star!

“For I testify to every one that hears the words of the prophecy of this book. If any man shall add to these things, God shall add unto him the plagues written in this book. And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the Book of Life, and out of the Holy City, and from these things that are written in this book” (22:18,19).

Do not try to improve or deny anything God has said. He it is Who sits on the Throne. He is Just Judge, there is no other. The words of the Bible were changed by Protestants from the 1500’s onwards, up to the present day, as they build a tower of Babel of bibles for Satan. Also, by the order of Vatican II, changes were made to the Sacra Biblia Vulgata and completed and sent out under the signature of Pope John Paul II. The neo-Roman Catholic Church is dead (*like all the other man-made ‘christian churches’ and heretics like Judaism, Islam etc.*) because of this most grievous error, and they must reverse those changes in order to be accepted back into the fold. Unless they do, they are become as all the other churches of ‘christendom,’ they are dead.

“He that gives testimony of these things, says: ‘Surely, I come quickly. Amen’” (22:20a).

He comes quickly, and we say: *“Come, Lord Jesus” (22:20b).*

We bless you: *“The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen” (22:21).*

Amen! So be it!

Appendix 1 - Petrus Romanus

If we look at the name in more detail and divide it into its two component parts, we will see that *Petrus* is the Latin name for Peter, taken from the Latin word *petra* meaning a *rock*, or *stone*. Jesus said: “Thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build My Church...” (*Mt 16:18*) thus confirming Peter as Priest, and Vicar upon earth.

When St. Malachy, under the inspiration of the Holy Ghost, calls Peter ‘*Romanus*,’ he is also identifying him as secular and temporal ruler over the earth, that is King or Monarch. *Romanus* is the Latin word for Roman, which is taken from the title of the Latin city called ‘*Roma*’ which incidentally means ‘strength.’ Petrus Romanus is Priest and Monarch over the whole earth, ecclesiastical and temporal, always aware that he is both priest and king. In Christ he is rock strong, rock solid.

Jesus Christ in His earthly mission certified His High Priesthood and His Kingship over all creation, it is therefore obvious that He would make His high priest the King, in the combined office of Petrus Romanus and Great Monarch, in His Eucharistic man.

It must be stated bluntly that Petrus Romanus was not the ‘pope’ who emerged from the Roman Catholic Conclave of 13 March 2013 (*13/3/13*).

This fact is so clear that only the protestant heathens, heretics, false prophets and vipers would dare to misconstrue the obvious facts. In 1517 Luther echoed Lucifer in saying: “I will not serve.” All protestants are false prophets who are leading unsuspecting souls to Hell. There is only One True Church, not the thousands of different protestant persuasions. “Is Christ divided?” (*1Co 1:13*). Saint Paul wrote of you when he said that: “Having their understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their hearts” (*Ep 4:18*), and so you protestant ministers, pastors, evangelists and so called teachers are the blind ones of today. Jesus asked: “Can the blind lead the blind? Do they not both fall into the ditch?” (*Lk 6:39*).

Appendix 1

I admonish you as a brother. I love you as a creature of Almighty God. I ask you to listen to what I have to say and repent, as Jesus is always ready to forgive and welcome you back into His merciful embrace.

The book by Peter Bander entitled '*The Prophecies of Saint Malachy*' can be found at Tan Books and Publishers, Inc., Rockford Illinois. (1973). He does not number the popes as 1, 2, 3...110, 111, 112. No, he lists them in the order of their arrival beginning with Celestine II (1143-1144) "to the end of the world." The numbering only started with various commentators, and so this numbering has led to a lot of errors in projecting the pope after 'Gloria Olivae. The Popes are not identified by name, but are described in symbolic terms. Malachy wrote them while he was in Rome, showed them to Pope Innocent II (1130-1143). He has been correct in all popes up to and including the 'retired' and now Pope Emeritus Benedict XVI. Incidentally, Benedict was the 111th entry in his list. The next and last entry in his list is that of "Petrus Romanus." Saint Malachy says of him in the only commentary of any of the popes foretold: "*In the final persecution of the S.R.E. (Holy Roman Church) there will reign Peter the Roman, who will feed his flock among many tribulations; after which the seven hilled city will be destroyed and the dreadful Judge will judge the people.*"

'In the final persecution of the Holy Roman Church...' it must be understood that St. Malachy did not say the 'Holy Roman Catholic Church,' but the Holy Roman Church. The Church has been persecuted since the very beginning, so this '*final persecution*' is a particular phase that in my opinion has already begun.

Another of the keys to properly understanding this prophecy is the phrase: '*will feed his flock among many tribulations.*' The good shepherd will FEED his flock, the false prophet will DELUDE his flock, will poison the flock.

My interpretation of 'Petrus' is that he will be 'rock' solid in the teachings of Jesus Christ: "Thou art Peter; and upon this rock I will build

Appendix 1

My church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it” (*Mt 16:18*). He will follow the Bible given to us by Saint Jerome before there were any breakaway groups who call themselves ‘churches’. (These 73 books were approved in the Church Councils at Hippo in 393; in Carthage in 419; in Florence in 1442; and after the Protestant Revolt at Trent in 1546). Petrus will refute all error. He will point out the Way and the Truth and the Life. He will bring the Light to a jaded world which has become dimmed with a profusion of errors. He will stop the worship of worldly power and restore all to the Power of God.

My interpretation of ‘*Roman*’ is that as Saint Peter brought the One, True, Holy, Catholic and Apostolic Church and established it in the center of Roman heathenism, so too ‘Petrus the Roman’ will bring the fulfilment of Christianity which is, and only is, Eucharistic catholicism, to a world polluted with the cancer of so many false religions with their false prophets. Petrus Romanus will lead the Church into the New Garden of Eden.

The common interpretation of ‘*the seven hilled city*’ is Rome, and so it is, but I would urge caution on this and perhaps look at the destruction of the seven deadly sins, which will happen when the devil and his accomplices are cast into hell for all eternity.

To speculate on the identity of Petrus Romanus is folly, but suffice to say that he will not be in the mold of the popes from John XXIII up to the present time, and he is most certainly not the one who calls himself ‘Francis.’ He will not be a post Vatican ecumenical liberal, but will have persisted with celebrating the Triditine Mass which was not disallowed by Vatican II, and therefor will still have been in obedience to the Chair of Peter. He will not be of the novo Vatican II Roman Catholic Church, but will be in the mold of the traditional and original Holy Roman Church, using St. Malachy’s term.

He will be fully Eucharisted, identified by his true devotion to Jesus Eucharist. He will be truly ‘born again,’ not according to the heresy and misunderstanding of protestants who do not know scripture, but

Appendix 1

according to the word given in the Gospels: “As many as received Him, He gave them power to be made the sons of God, to them that believe in His Name, who are born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God” (*Jn 1:12,13*). This being born again ‘of God’ can only come about through the Seven Sacraments of the Church, and receiving the Real Presence of Christ Jesus in Holy Eucharist. Jesus said at the Last Supper: “This is My Body...This is My Blood” (*Mt 26:26,28*). Holy Eucharist can only be consecrated by a validly ordained priest. Forgiveness of sins can only be forgiven by Christ’s representatives in the Holy Sacrament of Confessions: “Confess therefore your sins one to another” (*Jm 5:16*), and despite what is written in Holy Scripture, protestants say that they only confess directly to God. Protestant ministers cannot absolve sins because they have not the power given to them by Almighty God. Speaking of the errors dispensed by protestants Saint Peter says: “...unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, to their own destruction” (*2P 3:16*).

No priest exists in the protestant, Orthodox, or Coptic churches who have the power and authority to administer the Sacraments of Jesus Christ. Only such priests exist in The Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church.

It is in Eucharistic Union that the new man (*Ep 4:24*), the new creature (*2Co 5:17; Ga 6:15*), is born in the image and likeness of God, fulfilling what He said at the creating of man: “Let Us make man to Our image and likeness” (*Gn 1:26*). This ‘Us’ is the action of God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost. God the Father gave us His creation in the Old Testament. God the Son redeemed us in the New Testament. God the Holy Ghost renews and sanctifies us in the Third and Final Testament.

The devil, through false religions, has set up a contrary and evil ‘new creature, new man,’ in the worldly legal approval of divorces and homosexual ‘marriages.’ In order to be ‘politically correct’ these anti-Christ unions have now been endorsed by the highest ranking protestant cathedral in the United States of America, in the National Episcopal Cathedral in Washington, DC. They announced on 9 January 2013 that

Appendix 1

they were open for business! Their ‘dean’ said: “...It is now only fitting that the National Cathedral follow suit. We enthusiastically affirm each person as a beloved child of God — and doing so means including the full participation of gays and lesbian in the life of this spiritual home for the nation.” This ‘Catholic bashing’ organization, the beacon of Protestantism dares to call itself ‘Christian’ in spite of some 13 condemnations of homosexuality in the Holy Bible.

While Protestantism has spread it’s cancerous talons throughout the world, none was more destructive than the leprosy caused by a pope called John XXIII and his Second Vatican Council held from 1962 until 1965. Incidentally, this was the second ‘John XXIII,’ as the previous one by that name was the 37th of 38 anti-popes who reigned from 1410 to 1415. This new John XXIII was a 33rd degree Freemason who succeeded in bringing the once Holy Catholic Church almost as low as the protestant churches. He changed the Code of Canon Law to a legal document devoid of the spiritual comfort and direction of the previous document. He ordered the change of the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass and many other desecrations. His actions were more destructive than Luther because not only was he a validly ordained priest, but was consecrated bishop, cardinal and pope! As a pope is the Vicar of Christ, the spiritual and temporal leader of the world, it is obvious that Jesus Christ would not place the scepter in the hand of such a traitor. During his five year spell as ‘pope,’ indicating his contempt for the office of Peter, he only wore the Triple-Tiara (*the symbol of the authority given by the Most Holy Trinity to His Authority*) three times . His successor Paul VI wore the Triple Tiara but once, and the following popes, John Paul I, John Paul II, and Benedict XVI never wore the Triple Tiara, and so they never accepted the authority of the Holy Trinity as the spiritual and temporal leader of the world. Therefore, the scepter was never passed from Pope Pius XII to any of the succeeding popes, and will not be passed to the man elected in March 2013. The man elected in 2013 is in the same ilk as those from (the second) John XXIII onwards, and so Saint Malachy does not list him as a pope because Jesus no longer recognizes those disobedient people as His Authority. There are many other reasons why Jesus did not pass the scepter, but suffice to say that He would not and

Appendix 1

will not allow the gates of Hell to prevail against His One True Church.

We now come to the present time and the understanding of what has happened in the intervening years since John XXIII's accession to the Chair of Peter. There have been no valid ordinations after the death of Pope Pius XII in 1958. It must be admitted that there have been a great number of priests who saw the error of John XXIII and while they acknowledged him as holding the Chair of Peter, they did not accept the invalid Mass of the Novus Ordo, and so they privately celebrated the Tridentine Mass. They were not in disobedience to the Chair. Most of these priests have since died. Those still living will have been priests for at least 56 years leaving them to be in their 80's that is if they were ordained in '58. My point is that no day has passed in the history of the Church in which a valid Mass has not been celebrated in the world. God was, and still is in charge. "Behold the hand of the Lord is not shortened that it cannot save, neither is His ear heavy that it cannot hear" (*Is 59:1*).

Those valiant priests are those who have carried the Light of Christ throughout the period of time in which protestants and the liberal 'ecumenists' of Vatican II have served satan and not Jesus Christ. From these priests the spirit of Petrus Romanus will ignite in the faithful followers of Christ Jesus and will unite to extinguish those so-called 'christians.' They will defeat them 'Not with an army, nor by might, but by My Spirit, saith the Lord of Hosts'. Then shall all the tin horned false prophets and ministers be decimated. Then shall all the bombastic so called 'christian televangelists' who claim that Jesus is not the Messiah run for cover and cry to the rocks: "Fall upon us and hide us from the face of him that sits upon the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb" (*Apoc 6:16*).

Petrus Romanus will call on the faithful priests who seek truth to excommunicate themselves from the hierarchy to whom they are incardinated and come to the truth and the glory of the fulfillment of Holy Eucharist.

Petrus Romanus will call to those protestant errant ministers and leaders

Appendix 1

to leave all error behind and enter in at the narrow gate of the Eucharistic Church. He will repeat the words of Jesus: “Strive to enter by the narrow gate: for many, I say to you, shall seek to enter and shall not be able...Then you shall begin to say: We have eaten and drunk in Thy presence and Thou hast taught in our streets. And He shall say to you: I know you not, whence you are. Depart from Me, all ye workers of iniquity. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth when you shall see Abraham and Isaac and Jacob and all the prophets, in the Kingdom of God and you yourselves thrust out” (*Lk 13:24,26-28*).

We will now deal with the ‘new thing’ which God has proclaimed and how it arrives on the earth. In Isaiah He said: “The things that were first, behold they are come, and new things do I declare: before they spring forth, I will make you hear them...Behold I do new things, and now they shall spring forth, verily you shall know them. I will make a way in the wilderness, and rivers in the desert” (*Is 42:9;43:19*).

Saint Paul says: “If then any be in Christ a new creature, the old things are passed away. Behold all things are made new” (*2Co 5:17*).

Saint John writes: “And He that sat on the throne, said: Behold, I make all things new. And he said to me: Write. For these words are most faithful and true. And He said to me: It is done. I am Alpha and Omega: the Beginning and the End...” (*Apoc 21:5,6*).

Petrus Romanus is the new man, the new creation, which is Eucharistic man, that is, Jesus living in him, and he in Jesus in Eucharistic unity. All people who step out in faith and embrace the teachings and promises of Jesus Christ, through the Seven Sacraments of The Church, will become the new creation, the new man, born again in Eucharistic union and oneness in Him. Therefore in Christ, Eucharistic man is the new creature, the old things have passed away and all things are made new. Petrus Romanus is the first born in spirit and truth of Christ Jesus, and therefore the Book of Revelation (the Apocalypse) begins with the words: “*The revelation of Jesus Christ.*”

Appendix 1

Anyone who does not believe in the Real Presence of Jesus in Holy Eucharist, will not be able to understand who or what is *'the revelation of Jesus Christ,'* nor be able to enter into the New heaven and the new earth. It is the mission of Petrus Romanus to teach, convert and bring as many possible into this new creation state, The Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church.

Jesus said: "Behold I am with you all days, even to the consummation of the world" (*Mt 28:20*), and He is, in Holy Eucharist. "Then if any man shall say to you, 'Lo here is Christ,' or 'There,' do not believe him. If therefore they shall say to you, 'Behold He is in the desert,' go ye not out. 'Behold He is in the closets,' believe it not" (*Mt 24:23,26*). Why not? Where is He? He is within you who believe in His Real Presence and have received Him worthily in Holy Eucharist, having first received absolution for your sins in the Sacrament of Confessions! Therefore, His Second Coming is in those who receive Him in Holy Communion. Saint Paul writes: "Christ was offered once to exhaust the sins of many. The second time He shall appear without sin **in them that expect Him unto salvation**" (*Hb 9:28*).

His First Coming was as Man.

His Second Coming is in man.

His Third Coming is to judge man.

When we said above that Jesus 'is within you who believe in His Real Presence in Holy Eucharist,' this Real Presence within you is called 'Eucharistedness,' and this person is the 'New Man,' and the 'New Creature,' Eucharistic man. This is the truth of being *'born again.'* All other who say that they are 'born again' are deceived and deceivers.

Eucharistic man is the glory of being full of Grace, while evil man, those who deny any part of the Seven Sacraments, descend into Satanism, which is total 'dis-grace.' For those people who deny the Real Presence of Jesus in Holy Eucharist, block their understanding from the Truth, and their interpretation will be fatal to themselves and to all those poor unfortunates who follow their erroneous teachings. Jesus said: "There shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs

Appendix 1

and wonders, insomuch as to deceive (if possible) even the elect. Behold I have told it to you, beforehand” (*Mt 24:24,25*). All those who deny the Real Presence of Jesus in Holy Eucharist are false prophets and antichrists. Jesus said: “My flesh is meat indeed and my blood is drink indeed” (*Jn 6:56*), and Saint John strengthens our understanding when he wrote: “By this is the spirit of God known. Every spirit which confesses that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God, and every spirit that dissolves Jesus is not of God. And this is Antichrist, of whom you have heard that he comes and he is now already in the world” (*1Jn 4:2,3*).

When Saint John said that he saw ‘*one like to the Son of man*’ he saw the fulfillment of what God said: ‘*Let Us make man to Our ‘image and likeness.’*’ He saw Eucharistic man in the likeness of God. The man which he saw was Eucharistic man, Petrus Romanus, who is the first ‘*born again*’ after Jesus. Saint John is seeing the fulfillment of what Saint Paul wrote about when he said: “...may we in all things grow up in Him, Who is the Head (*Ep 4:15*), walking in newness of life, in the likeness of His resurrection (*Rm 6:4,5*), to perfect man, unto the measure of the age of the fulness of Christ” (*Ep 4:13*). What is spoken of here is the new creature, the new man, Eucharistic man.

When we read what Saint John said: “*When I had seen him, I fell at his feet as dead, and he laid his right hand upon me, saying: ‘Fear not. I am the first and the last, and alive, and was dead, and behold I am living for ever and ever, and have the keys of death and of Hell’*” (*Apoc 1:17,18*). We see that the mind, wisdom, power, authority, and unity of God is in man, and man is in his God, and we see that ‘*Christ is all, and in all*’ (*Col 3:11*). We see that the cycle of the creation of man is completed:

- 1st - From perfect man in the Paradise of pleasure (*alive*),
- 2nd - To fallen man expelled from the Garden of Eden (*dead*),
- 3rd - To perfect man through Christ Jesus, Who brings us to completion in His Eucharistic Self, Perfect man, Eucharistic man, in the Paradise of God (*living for ever and ever*).

The fact that when Saint John had seen Eucharistic man, he thought that

Appendix 1

he saw Jesus and he “fell at his feet as dead” (*Apoc 1:17*), and again: “I fell down before his feet, to adore him, and he said to me: See you do it not. I am your fellow servant and of your brethren who have the testimony of Jesus” (*Apoc 19:10*). Saint John was seeing Petrus Romanus, who is the fulfillment of what Almighty God had said: ‘Let Us make man to Our image and likeness.’ Eucharistic man is that fulfillment, of which Petrus Romanus is the first born of Christ Jesus, and then Christ Jesus is the Father of the world which **IS** come!

It is to this ‘new man - born again’ of Christ Jesus, that the power and authority of God is given to take back from Satan what fallen man gave away in the beginning.

In Mystical Union in God, Petrus Romanus is given the authority, the power and the dominion to bring about the restitution of all things on earth (*Acts 3:21*). Jesus said: “Amen, amen, I say to you, he that believes in Me, the works that I do, he also shall do, and greater than these shall he do” (*Jn 14:12*). The works which Jesus did were miraculous beyond words! So what would be greater than those works? Putting Satan and all evil into Hell for ever! To His final High Priest, who is both Priest and King - Petrus Romanus, Great Monarch, is this work committed. Man gave his authority to the devil, and man, in Jesus, must take it back.

Petrus Romanus will immediately condemn all the false religions and churches. He will condemn those who say that they are Jews and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan (*Apoc 2:9*), that is he will condemn those who say that they follow Jesus the King of the Jews (*Jn 19:19*) yet deny His Sacraments and His appointed ruler.

Because of his faith in Jesus Eucharist, and of the graces he has received from Almighty God, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, Petrus Romanus is able to *open the seven seals*. He is referred to as ‘*The lion of the tribe of Judah*’, because as Eucharistic man in Christ Jesus, he is given the authority to act in the person of the ‘Lion of the tribe of Judah’ (*Apoc 5:5*), he is both Monarch and Priest.

Appendix 1

Petrus Romanus is given the authority, the power and the dominion to unite the Mystical Body of Christ in the final battle of the Ages. This Mystical Body consists of:

The Church Triumphant: (*Every creature in Heaven*).

The Church Militant (Eucharistic Church): (*On the earth and sea*).

The Church Suffering: (*Under the earth*).

It is Petrus Romanus who completes all that is written in the Book of Revelation, the Book of the Apocalypse. His actions center around the verse: “*And the Temple of God was opened in heaven, and the Ark of His Testament was seen in His Temple. And there were lightnings and voices and an earthquake and great hail*” (*Apoc 11:19*).

The Temple of God was opened in heaven which is the Eternal, Virgin, Eucharistic Church on earth, joined with Heaven. It is Petrus Romanus, the Great Monarch, who opens the Ark of the Covenant in the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church. Here the great mystery is revealed for those who can accept it. The prayer of the Lord: ‘Thy Kingdom come...on earth as it is in Heaven’ is now being fulfilled. What is this Kingdom? It is the unity of Heaven and earth in Eucharistic oneness in the Holy Trinity. It is exactly as we said above, Heaven joined with earth. Why can this be done now? Because now the few with faith have accepted all the promises of the Seven Sacraments, have become Eucharistic man, and have been given the power and the authority to stand steadfast in Christ Jesus, defeat the Devil, and open the gates to Paradise, to the Tree of Life.

Jesus said: “For as lightning comes out of the east and appears even into the west, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be” (*Mt 24:27*). The ‘lightning’ coming out of the east is the Ark of the Covenant brought to the west. The illumination, corrections and chastisements (*lightnings*) of the world by the prophets of God are seen and heard (*voices*), with great power (*hail*). This great hail is seen later when it is said: “The Temple of the Tabernacle of the Testimony in Heaven was opened” (*Apoc 15:5*), and no one was able to enter in until after the wrath of God was fulfilled. This is the time when those who remained until now in disbelief will have their final chance to convert. Great awakenings, and warnings

Appendix 1

(*earthquakes*), are given to the errors taught by those in authority.

'*The Ark of His Testament was seen in His Temple,*' is the recovery of the Ark of the Covenant as written in Holy Scripture: "It was also contained in the same writing, how the prophet (*Jeremiah*), being warned by God, commanded that the Tabernacle and the Ark should accompany him, till he came forth to the mountain where Moses went up, and saw the inheritance of God (*Mt Nebo, Dt 34:1*), and when Jeremiah came there he found a hollow cave: and he carried in there the Tabernacle, and the Ark, and the Altar of Incense, and so stopped the door. Then some of them that followed him, came up to mark the place: but they could not find it, and when Jeremiah perceived it, he blamed (*chastised*) them, saying: The place shall be unknown, till God gather together the congregation of the people, and receive them to mercy. And then the Lord will show these things, and the majesty of the Lord shall appear, and there shall be a cloud as it was also showed to Moses, and He showed it when Solomon prayed that the place might be sanctified to the great God" (*2M 2:4-8*).

The Great Monarch, Petrus Romanus will seal the 144,000. This 144,000 is the remnant who believe and stand firm in the Word of God. They do not waver. These have entered in by the narrow gate of the Eucharistic Church as stated earlier. Before and during the Great Tribulation, these will bring the truth to a world in turmoil, and which has been led astray by the antichrist political systems of the world, and the ecumenical and the compromising false prophets of the world. The 144,000 will go on to propagate and multiply, and thus bring in great multitudes to the Church.

After this, all is done. The Eucharistic Reign of Christ is universal, without any opposition. Here is rejoicing! The events of time are ended, the new has begun, all things are made new (*Apoc 21:5,6*). The corrections are made, the seventh trumpet is completed, and the final march around the spiritual Jericho is finished.

We have said before that the fulfillment of Christianity is Eucharistic unity and oneness in God. Just as the fulfillment of Judaism was

Appendix 1

Christianity so too this final fulfillment of Eucharistedness completes the Plan of God.

Suffice to say that God destroyed the place of the Ark in Shilo, and that His Temple in Jerusalem was destroyed, so too the place of the 'temple' of the Vatican will be destroyed because of the error and iniquities of its rulers. Therefore it is necessary to move beyond that which is and cannot be repaired.

At this time it is necessary to look at the 'system' of Petrus Romanus, the Great Monarch. The 'system' is God living in man, and man living in God, which is Eucharistic unity, the new creature, Eucharistic man, in the Eucharistic Church. This Eucharistedness is the 'pearl of great price.' Jesus said: "The Kingdom of Heaven is like to a merchant seeking good pearls, who when he had found one pearl of great price, went his way, and sold all that he had, and bought it" (*Mt 13:45,46*). This 'pearl' is Eucharistic unity and oneness with God. This pearl can only be achieved through believing and practicing the Seven Sacraments of the Church. Entry to the Church can only be gained through the 'narrow gate,' as Jesus said: "Strive to enter by the narrow gate, for many, I say to you, shall seek to enter and shall not be able" (*Lk 13:24*). There is no other way. Jesus also said: "I am the Door of the sheep. All others, as many as have come, are thieves and robbers, and the sheep heard them not. I am the Door. By Me, if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and he shall go in and go out, and shall find pastures. The thief comes not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I am come that they may have Life and may have it more abundantly" (*Jn 10:7-11*). The Door, the narrow gate, is the Eucharistic Church. Jesus said: "...except you eat the Flesh of the Son of man and drink His Blood, you shall not have Life in you" (*Jn 6:54*). This 'Life' is Holy Eucharist, and Holy Eucharist can only be found in the Church which completes Christianity, and that Church is the Eternal, Virgin, Eucharistic Church. There is no other place in God's earth where Jesus Eucharist is to be found.

The Eucharistic Church declares that it is free from Satan and all his minions. Those priests, bishops, archbishops, cardinals, ordained in the

Appendix 1

post Vatican II era are not automatically admitted. There will be a great number of those ‘ordained’ who will seek to be admitted into the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church. After they have been instructed in Eucharistedness, they *may* be admitted. The Church is now secured against the errors and darkness of the false prophets who were under the direction of evil. The heresies of the Vatican II, and Protestant, and Orthodox, Coptic ‘Christians’, Judaism, Islam, and all the other ‘religions of the world, is exposed and cast out.

In conclusion, all people should seek ‘the Pearl of Great Price,’ and enter into the Eucharistic Church where all things are now made ready.

In looking for the man, Petrus Romanus, let us examine some extracts from the Apocalypse. “*And a great sign appeared in Heaven: A woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and on her head a crown of twelve stars*” (12:1).

The woman is the Church, and in the spiritual sense it is also Our Blessed Lady, Mother of the Church, for she is the Mother of Jesus, Who is the Church (*Ep 5:23*). Therefore, the Church, clothed with Christ, the Light of the world (*the sun*), with the authority over the world (*the moon*) under her feet. This is to show that the Divine law of God is unchangeable, and that the ‘fresh air’ of the second John XXIII and his Vatican II agenda is to be disregarded as heresy. The government (*crown of twelve stars*) on her head, signifies that the Church is the only governing authority in the world, and that all nations must be subject to the Law of God. The ‘*sign*’ is that God is over all, as it is His universe, and the total authority over the world is in the hands of the Eucharistic Church. This is the ‘*sign*.’

“*And she (the Church) brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with an iron rod. And her son was taken up to God and to his Throne*” (12:5).

This ‘*man child*,’ is the Great Monarch, also known as Petrus Romanus, Eucharistic man, the last ‘Authority’ of Christ to reign on the earth until the end of time. This ‘*man child*’ has become one in Jesus, and Jesus one in him, thus making the new creation, Eucharistic man, as we saw

Appendix 1

before.

The gates of Hell shall not prevail against the Church, because in Eucharistic man, the new creature, there is no sin, and there can be no sin, as it is written: “Whosoever is born of God commits not sin, for His seed abides in him, and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. In this the children of God are manifest” (1Jn 3:9,10).

‘Who was to rule all nations with an iron rod,’ is king and priest, the Great Monarch, who has total authority which he receives from and in God to bring all creation into Paradise, the new Garden of Eden.

In being *‘taken up to God and to His Throne,’* Eucharistic man is taken ‘up’ into the heart of Christ Jesus, and is set down with Him in His Throne in Eucharistic unity. In being ‘taken up to God and to His Throne,’ the Great Monarch, Petrus Romanus is instructed in Kingdom Authority, spiritual warfare, Kingdom living, and Kingdom rule (*iron rod*). This *‘taken up’* is being sealed with Divine honor and priestly sovereignty, in order to draw into the Church the scattered flocks out of all the nations, so that there shall be: “One Lord, one faith, one baptism. One God and Father of all, Who is above all, and through all, and in us all” (Ep 4:5,6).

How does Petrus Romanus the Great Monarch rule? ‘Not with an army, nor by might, but by My Spirit, saith the Lord of hosts.’ There will be no fancy building, no exotic attire, no entourage of security forces, but a humble and even unnoticed pilgrimage around the world to encourage souls to persevere in the faith of God (Mk 11:22). He will encourage priests to teach and emphasize the Seven Sacraments of the Church. He will encourage all to stand firm against the certain persecution from the New World Order, and the One World Church, being enforced by the Zionist/Masonic/Communist forces of the Satanic Noahide Laws, and from the diabolical evil of Islam.

He will be a pillar of strength against the cunning maneuvers of the Antichrist and the False Prophet who are already in place as of this

Appendix 1

writing (the year 2019). Through the power of God, he will defeat the power of the devil and his satanic agents.

In the vision given to Pope Leo XIII in 1884 of Satan shaking his fist at Jesus and saying that given 100 years he would conquer the world. The 100 years began with the message of Our Lady of Fatima.

I do stress that the Great Monarch who is also Petrus Romanus, is fully Eucharistened man. The Great Monarch, the last pope of St. Malachy's prophecies, is likened to Samuel with Saul and David, and Moses with Aaron. Let us then examine briefly what Sirach (Ecclesiasticus *which means 'a preacher'*) has to say of Samuel: "Samuel the prophet of the Lord, the beloved of the Lord his God, established a new government, and anointed princes over His people. By the law of the Lord he judged the congregation, and the God of Jacob beheld, and by his fidelity he was proved a prophet. And he was known to be faithful in his words, because he saw the God of light, and called upon the Name of the Lord Almighty, in fighting against the enemies who beset him on every side, when he offered a lamb without blemish. And the Lord thundered from heaven, and with a great noise made his voice to be heard, and he crushed the princes of the Tyrians, and all the lords of the Philistines" (*Si 46:16-21*).

The Great Monarch then is God's anointed who will bring the whole earth into submission under Christ Jesus, King of All Nations. He will appoint priests, rulers, and territories as originally planned by God before the creation of anything.

He will be instructed in the events before 'the beginning' when God created. He will have been instructed in the teachings which Christ Jesus gave to the souls in prison (*IP 3:19*).

He will be privy to the foretaste of all that transpired when "the graves were opened and many bodies of the saints that had slept arose, and coming out of the tombs **AFTER** His resurrection, came into the holy city and appeared to many" (*Mt 27:52,53*).

Appendix 1

He will see, know, understand and execute what is already foretold about his work, that “the armies that are in Heaven followed him on white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean” (*Apoc 19:14*).

At the end of the mission given to him by Our Lord, the solemn promise given to us by Our Saviour will have been completed: “For amen I say unto you, till heaven and earth pass, one jot, or one tittle shall not pass of the law, till all be fulfilled” (*Mt 5:18*).

We pray for the arrival of Petrus Romanus.

Appendix 2 - Eucharistic Church

The Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church

Petrus Romanus is the high priest and monarch of the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church. The Church is the promise of Jesus that all things are made new. This ‘newness’ is still the Mystical Body of Christ, but without the defilement and atrocities committed against it by the fractious divisions of so-called Christians, and opposition by all the other religions of the world.

When Jesus descended into Limbo after He was placed in the tomb, He instructed those souls on the events in eternity (*1P 3:19*), that is the events which took place in the Heart of God the Father before when ‘In the beginning God created’ (*Gn 1:1*).

This understanding of ‘in the Heart of God the Father’ in eternity is to be understood in a new name, a new title, which has to be the fulfilment of Judaism in Christianity, and the further the fulfilment of Christianity in the Eternal Virgin Eucharist Church. This Church is built on top of all the other churches which have ever existed. This is the last and the eternal Church which shall not be contaminated or destroyed: “And in the last days the mountain of the house of the Lord shall be prepared on the top of mountains, and it shall be exalted above the hills, and all nations shall flow unto it” (*Is 2:2*). Saint Paul expands on this by writing: “If then any be in Christ a new creature, the old things are passed away. Behold all things are made new” (*2Co 5:17*).

This Church is ‘*Eternal*’, everlasting, without end, because it was created in the Heart of the Father before the creation of the angels or the universe.

It is ‘*Virgin*’ because it has nothing of fallen man’s limited understanding, rules, or prohibitions, as St. Paul says: “For I am jealous of you with the jealousy of God. For I have espoused you to One Husband, that I may present you as a chaste **VIRGIN** to Christ” (*2Co 11:2*).

It is *Eucharist*, ‘thanksgiving’, because Jesus said: “I am the Bread of

Appendix 2

Life. He that comes to Me shall not hunger, and he that believes in Me shall never thirst. Amen, amen, I say unto you: He that believes in Me has Everlasting Life. I am the Bread of Life” (*Jn 6:35,47,48*).

It is the *Church*: “And I say to thee: That thou art Peter; and upon this rock I will build My Church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it” (*Mt 16:18*).

“For in Him were all things created in Heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones, or dominations, or principalities, or powers. All things were created by Him and in Him. And He is before all and by Him all things consist. And He is the head of the Body, the Church, Who is the beginning, the Firstborn from the dead, that in all things He may hold the primacy, because in Him, it has well pleased the Father that all fulness should dwell, and through Him to reconcile all things unto Himself, making peace through the Blood of His Cross, both as to the things that are on earth and the things that are in Heaven” (*Col 1:16-20*).

“...that you may know how you ought to behave yourself in the House of God, which is the Church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. And evidently great is the sacrament of godliness, which was manifested in the flesh, was justified in the spirit, appeared unto angels, has been preached unto the Gentiles, is believed in the world, is taken up in glory” (*1T 3:15,16*).

Saint John said: “I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth was gone and the sea is now no more. And I, John, saw the holy city, the new Jerusalem, coming down out of Heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice from the throne, saying: Behold the Tabernacle of God with men, and He will dwell with them and they shall be His people and God Himself with them shall be their God. And He that sat on the Throne, said: Behold, I make all things new. And He said to me: Write. For these words are most faithful and true” (*Apoc 21:1-5*).

With comfort and joy, Petrus Romanus, will work his work in the Church as foretold by Almighty God, as is written: “Behold I do new things, and now they shall spring forth, verily you shall know them: I will make a way in the wilderness, and rivers in the desert...For behold I

Appendix 2

create new heavens, and a new earth, and the former things shall not be in remembrance, and they shall not come upon the heart...For as the new heavens, and the new earth, which I will make to stand before Me, saith the Lord: so shall your seed stand, and your name” (*Is 43:19; 65:17; 66:22*).

You may ask why is Petrus Romanus and The Great Monarch the same person? The answer is quite simple. Moses was both the ‘political’ and ‘religious’ leader and Aaron was appointed the High Priest. Aaron sinned in molding the idol of the golden calf, the High Priest sinned. Samuel was both the religious and political leader and appointed Saul ‘king.’ Saul sinned in disobedience and took unto himself to make the sacrifice without waiting for his leader Samuel. Saul sinned.

Saint Peter was appointed the Vicar of Christ and exercised his office with dignity and propriety. His successors in these the last days have changed the word of God, have politicized the Papal Office to the point of seeking ‘political correctness’ at the expense of God’s Law. The title of Vicar of Christ has been defiled, therefor Christ Jesus has established the new title of High Priest and Monarch. It is necessary then that the office of Priest and King should be in the hands of God’s appointed High Priest and King, Petrus Romanus, the Great Monarch.

In the Publisher’s Preface to the book written by Father Culleton entitled ‘The Prophets and Our Times,’ Thomas A Nelson of TAN Publishing wrote in 1974: “...the enemies of God and of His Holy Church will not know where or how to prepare themselves to resist successfully the advent of the Great Monarch. God will nurture this man in His own manner, who, the prophecies seem to indicate, will not even be known to himself until a late moment. When the man finally takes the field, it will be all over for the enemies of God, despite their numerical superiority and seeming greater power.”

The prophet Isaiah speaks of him: “And the Gentiles shall see thy just one, and all kings thy glorious one, and thou shalt be called by a new name, which the mouth of the Lord shall name.” It goes on to say of him

Appendix 2

in the following verse “And thou shall be a crown of glory in the hand of the Lord, and a royal diadem in the hand of thy God” (*Is 62:2,3*).

There is no doubt that while on earth, Jesus Christ united in Himself the office of King and Priest, as it is written: Pilate said to Jesus: “Art Thou a King then?” Jesus answered: “Thou sayest that I am a King. For this was I born, and for this came I into the world” (*Jn 18:37*).

St. Paul states: “Having therefore a great High Priest that has passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God...For it was fitting that we should have such a High Priest, holy, innocent, undefiled, separated from sinners, and made higher than the heavens...” (*Hb 4:14;7:26*).

Having certified His High Priesthood and His Kingship, it is therefore obvious that He would replace the Authority with one person to be both High Priest and King, in the combined office of Petrus Romanus and Great Monarch, in His Eucharisted man.

The earthly power uniting Church and State is the Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church. Amen.

Abbreviations of the books of the Bible
in Alphabetical Order of Abbreviations

1Ch - 1 Chronicles	Jr - Jeremiah
1Co - 1 Corinthians	Job - Job
1Jn - 1 John	Jl - Joel
1K - 1 Kings	Jn - John
1M - 1 Maccabees	Jon - Jonah
1P - 1 Peter	Jos - Joshua
1S - 1 Samuel	Jude - Jude
1T - 1 Timothy	Jg - Judges
1Th - 1 Thessalonians	Jdt - Judith
2Ch - 2 Chronicles	La - Lamentations
2Co - 2 Corinthians	Lv - Leviticus
2Jn - 2 John	Lk - Luke
2K - 2 Kings	Mal - Malachi
2M - 2 Maccabees	Mk - Mark
2P - 2 Peter	Mt - Matthew
2S - 2 Samuel	Mi - Micah
2T - 2 Timothy	Na - Nahum
2Th - 2 Thessalonians	Ne - Nehemiah
3Jn - 3 John	Nu - Numbers
3K - 3 Kings	Obd - Obadiah
4K - 4 Kings	Phm - Philemon
Ac - Acts	Phil - Philippians
Am - Amos	Pr - Proverbs
Apoc - Apocalypse	Ps - Psalms
Ba - Baruch	Rm - Romans
Col - Colossians	Ru - Ruth
Dn - Daniel	Si (Ecclesiasticus) - Sirach
Dt - Deuteronomy	Sg (Canticles) - Songs
Ec - Ecclesiastes	Tb - Tobit
Ep - Ephesians	Tt - Titus
Es - Esther	Ws - Wisdom
Ex - Exodus	Zc - Zechariah
Ez - Ezekiel	Zp - Zephaniah
Ezr - Ezra	
Ga - Galatians	
Gn - Genesis	
Hk - Habakkuk	
Hg - Haggai	
Hb - Hebrews	
Ho - Hosea	
Is - Isaiah	
Jm - James	

Spiritual Numbers

1. God the Father. Primacy. Unity.
2. God the Son. The two distinct natures in Christ, Divine and human. There is Another. Opposition. Division.
3. God the Holy Ghost. Holy Trinity. Divine Perfection.
4. Universal. Creation. Completion.
5. Grace. Five wounds of Christ. Divine favor.
6. Man, created on day 6. Imperfection. Iniquity.
7. Spirit. Spiritual Perfection. Mystical. Prophetical.
8. New Beginning.
9. Judgment. Nine choirs of angels.
10. Order. Perfection of Divine Order. Fullness. Completion in worldly Godless sense.
11. Disorder. Incomplete as evidenced by Judas' defection.
12. Divine order. Signifies $3 \times 4 = 12$, which is spiritual completeness in the Holy Trinity. Government. Maturity.
13. Treachery. Recalling the presence of the traitor at the Last Supper, beyond Christ and the faithful eleven apostles.
14. Sacrifice.
40. Trials. Testing. Waiting.
50. Divine fulfillment of a promise.
100. Plenitude.
- 1,000. An immense number. Eternity. All higher numbers are either an addition to a thousand or multiplications of the same.

Bibliography

Arrival of Morning Star, by Father Aquinas
www.kingshipofchrist.org

The Book of Destiny, by Father Herman Bernard Kramer.
Tan Books and Publishers, Inc., Rockford Illinois. (1975).

The Kingship of Christ and the Conversion of the Jewish Nation,
by Rev. Denis Fahey, C.S.Sp., (1953).
Published by The Christian Book Club of America,
P.O. Box 900566, Palmdale, California. 93590-0566.

Catholic Dictionary.
Virtue & Co. Ltd., London England. (1918).

Prophecies of Saint Malachy, by Peter Bander.
Tan Books and Publishers, Inc., Rockford Illinois. (1973).

Rheims New Testament.
With footnotes by the Fathers at the English College of Rheims, France
(1582).

Apparition of the Blessed Virgin on the Mountain of La Salette the 19th
of September, 1846.
Published by The Shepherdess of La Salette, Lyon, France (1904).

The Truth About the Talmud, by Michael A. Hoffman,
excerpts from his book, "Judaism's Strange Gods."
Independent History and Research, Box 849, Coeur d'Alene, Idaho
83816
. <http://www.revisionisthistory.org/talmudtruth.html>

The Prophets and Our Times, by Father Gerald Culleton.
Tan Books and Publishers, Inc., Rockford Illinois. (1974).

Publications by the same author

Published under the name of Thomas Aquinas Devlin:

The Gift of Morning Star

Why Mary?

Published by Father Aquinas:

Angels, Angelic Warfare, and You

Arrival of Morning Star

Bethlehem - New Life

Essays on Various Subjects

Handbook of Rites And Blessings

Mary

Miraculous Events

Missal Prayer Book

Prayers Everyone Should Know

The Ark of the Covenant

The Eternal Priesthood

The Holy Rosary

The Holy Sacrament of Confessions

The Last Gospel

The Message. The Warning. The Conclusion.

The New Creation State

The Reign of Christ in His Second Coming

The Return of Man to God

The Sacrament of Holy Eucharist

The Seven Sacraments of the Church

The Third Testament - The Eternal Virgin Eucharistic Church

The Three Days of Darkness

The 666

Understanding the Apocalypse

Published by: Kingship of Christ

Web address: www.kingshipofchrist.org